NARRATIVES OF TRAUMATISED CHILDHOOD: A STUDY OF SELECT NOVELS ACROSS CULTURES

Thesis submitted to the University of Calicut
in partial fulfilment of the requirements for the award of the degree of
Doctor of Philosophy in English Language and Literature

By

Sharfudden M.

U. O. No. 13041/2017/Admn

Under the Guidance of

Dr Rajani. B.

Associate Professor & Principal

Research & Post Graduate Department of English

Zamorin's Guruvayurappan College

Kozhikode

Kerala 673014

Affiliated to the University of Calicut

May 2024

Dr. Rajani B.
Associate Professor & Principal
Zamorin's Guruvayurappan College
Kozhikode Kerala, India

CERTIFICATE

This is to certify that the thesis entitled **"Narratives of Traumatised Childhood: A Study of Select Novels Across Cultures"** submitted to the University of Calicut for the award of the Degree of Doctor of Philosophy in English Language & Literature is a bona fide record of the studies and research carried out by **Sharfudden M.** under my supervision and this research work has not previously formed the basis of award for any degree, diploma, fellowship or any other similar titles or recognition.

Place: Kozhikode **Dr. Rajani B.**
Date: 30-05-2024

DECLARATION

I, **Sharfudden M.**, hereby declare that this thesis titled, **"Narratives of Traumatised Childhood: A Study of Select Novels Across Cultures"** is an authentic record of the research work carried out by me under the supervision of Dr Rajani B., Associate Professor and Principal, Zamorin's Guruvayurappan College, Kozhikode, and it has not previously formed the basis for the award of any degree, diploma, associateship, fellowship or any other similar title or recognition.

Place: Kozhikode **Sharfudden M.**

Date: 30-05-2024

Acknowledgements

First and foremost, I extend my heartfelt gratitude to the Almighty God for providing me with the strength and perseverance to complete this PhD thesis.

My profound gratitude goes to my research supervisor, Dr. Rajni B., Associate Professor and Principal of Zamorin's Guruvayurappan College, Kozhikode, for her invaluable guidance, support, and encouragement. Her insightful suggestions and critical feedback were instrumental in refining my work.

I am deeply appreciative of Dr. Janaki Sreedharan, Professor, Department of English, University of Calicut, for her expertise and thorough critiques that enriched the quality of my thesis.

Sincere thanks to Dr. Rajesh KP, Assistant Professor, Department of Botany, Zamorin's Guruvayurappan College, for his crucial assistance with fellowships, which allowed me to focus on my research without financial concerns.

I am grateful to the faculty members and co-scholars of the Department of English at Zamorin's Guruvayurappan College, and to scholars from other departments, for their support and stimulating discussions.

A special thanks to my parents, brothers, and other family members for their unconditional love, support, and understanding throughout this journey. Their belief in me kept me motivated and determined, even during the most challenging times.

Lastly, I would like to thank my friends for their constant support, encouragement, and companionship. Their understanding and moral support helped me stay balanced and focused. The moments of joy and respite shared with them provided the necessary breaks from my intense research work.

Thank you all for being a part of this journey and contributing to the completion of this thesis. Your support and encouragement have been invaluable, and I am deeply grateful for each one of you.

CONTENTS

Abstract

Childhood trauma is a profound and complex experience that shapes the lives of individuals and their identities in multiple ways. Narratives of traumatised childhoods offer valuable insights into the human condition, societal forces and the resilience of the human spirit across cultures. This Ph.D. thesis titled **"Narratives of Traumatised Childhood: A Study of Select Novels Across Cultures"** critically examines the portrayal of childhood trauma in five select novels from diverse cultural backgrounds. The novels are *The Kite Runner* by Khaled Hosseini, *Atonement* by Ian McEwan, *Cracking India* by Bapsi Sidhwa, *Beasts of No Nation* by Uzodinma Iweala, and *God Help the Child* by Toni Morrison. Each narrative presents unique insights into how childhood experiences of trauma are shaped by historical, political and social contexts.

From the war-torn landscapes of Afghanistan and West Africa to the racial tensions of America and the communal upheaval of partition-era India, and the backdrop of World War II-era England, these narratives delve into the personal and collective dimensions of trauma. Through an interdisciplinary approach drawing from literature, trauma studies, psychology, sociology and cultural studies this study aims to uncover the narrative techniques, cultural contexts and thematic motifs that shape the representation of trauma in literature.

The study begins with an overview of Literary Trauma Theory, exploring its evolution and relevance in understanding the complexities of traumatic experiences as depicted in literature. It then proceeds to analyse each novel individually, examining the socio-political contexts, character dynamics, narrative strategies and thematic concerns related to childhood trauma. Through close textual analysis and theoretical

engagement, the study elucidates how these narratives provide insights into the psychological, emotional, and social dimensions of trauma.

Furthermore, this thesis engages in a comparative analysis across the selected novels, highlighting thematic and narrative parallels, cultural specificities and theoretical implications. By synthesising insights from diverse cultural contexts, this study seeks to contribute to a more nuanced understanding of childhood trauma and its representation in literature. Ultimately, this thesis aims to shed light on the enduring impact of childhood trauma on individual and collective identities. Through a multidisciplinary and cross-cultural approach, this study endeavours to expand the horizons of trauma literature and deepen our understanding of the human capacity for resilience and healing in the face of adversity.

പ്രബന്ധസംഗ്രഹം

വ്യക്തികളുടെ ജീവിതത്തെയും വ്യക്തിത്വത്തെയും ആഴത്തിലുള്ള രീതിയിൽ രൂപപ്പെടുത്തുന്ന ആഴമേറിയതും സങ്കീർണ്ണവുമായ അനുഭവമാണ് ബാല്യകാലത്തെ ട്രോമ. ബാല്യകാലത്തെ ട്രോമയുടെ വിവരണങ്ങൾ, സംസ്കാരങ്ങളിലും ചരിത്രപരമായ സന്ദർഭങ്ങളിലും ഉടനീളം, മനുഷ്യാവസ്ഥ, സാമൂഹിക ശക്തികൾ, മനുഷ്യാത്മാവിന്റെ പ്രതിരോധശേഷി എന്നിവയെക്കുറിച്ച് വിലപ്പെട്ട ഉൾക്കാഴ്ചകൾ നൽകുന്നു. " ബാല്യകാല ട്രോമയുടെ വിവരണങ്ങൾ: സംസ്കാരങ്ങളിലുടനീളമുള്ള തിരഞ്ഞെടുത്ത നോവലുകളുടെ ഒരു പഠനം" എന്ന തലക്കെട്ടിലുള്ള ഈ തീസിസ് വൈവിധ്യമാർന്ന സാംസ്കാരിക പശ്ചാത്തലങ്ങളിൽ നിന്നുള്ള തിരഞ്ഞെടുത്ത അഞ്ച് നോവലുകളിൽ ബാല്യകാലത്തെ ട്രോമയുടെ ചിത്രീകരണം വിമർശനാത്മകമായി പരിശോധിക്കുന്നു. ഖാലിദ് ഹൊസൈനി എഴുതിയ *ദി കൈറ്റ് റണ്ണർ*, ഇയാൻ മക് ഇവാൻ എഴുതിയ *അടോൺമെന്റ്*, ബാപ്സി സിദ്ധ്വയുടെ *ക്രാക്കിംഗ് ഇന്ത്യ*, ഉസോദിൻമ ഇവേലയുടെ *ബീസ്റ്റ്സ് ഓഫ് നോ നേഷൻ*, ടോണി മോറിസന്റെ *ഗോഡ് ഹെൽപ്പ് ദി ചൈൽഡ്* എന്നിവയാണ് നോവലുകൾ. ഓരോ ആഖ്യാനവും കൂട്ടിക്കാലത്തെ ആഘാതാനുഭവങ്ങൾ ചരിത്രപരവും രാഷ്ട്രീയവും സാമൂഹികവുമായ സന്ദർഭങ്ങളാൽ എങ്ങനെ രൂപപ്പെടുന്നു എന്നതിനെക്കുറിച്ചുള്ള സവിശേഷമായ ഉൾക്കാഴ്ചകൾ അവതരിപ്പിക്കുന്നു.

യുദ്ധത്തിൽ തകർന്ന അഫ്ഗാനിസ്ഥാനിലെയും പടിഞ്ഞാറൻ ആഫ്രിക്കയിലെയും ഭ്രപ്രകൃതികൾ മുതൽ അമേരിക്കയുടെ വംശീയ സംഘർഷങ്ങൾ, വിഭജനകാലത്തെ ഇന്ത്യയുടെ വർഗീയ കലാപം, രണ്ടാം ലോകമഹായുദ്ധകാലത്തെ ഇംഗ്ലണ്ടിന്റെ പശ്ചാത്തലം വരെ, ഈ വിവരണങ്ങൾ ട്രോമയുടെ വ്യക്തിപരവും കൂട്ടായതുമായ മാനങ്ങൾ പരിശോധിക്കുന്നു. സാഹിത്യം, ട്രോമ പഠനങ്ങൾ, മനഃശാസ്ത്രം, സാമൂഹ്യശാസ്ത്രം, സാംസ്കാരിക പഠനങ്ങൾ എന്നിവയിൽ നിന്നുള്ള ഒരു ഇന്റർ ഡിസിപ്ലിനറി സമീപനത്തിലൂടെ സാഹിത്യത്തിലെ ട്രോമയുടെ പ്രാതിനിധ്യം രൂപപ്പെടുത്തുന്ന ആഖ്യാന സാങ്കേതികവിദ്യകൾ, സാംസ്കാരിക സന്ദർഭങ്ങൾ, തീമാറ്റിക് രൂപങ്ങൾ എന്നിവ കണ്ടെത്താനാണ് ഈ പഠനം ലക്ഷ്യമിടുന്നത്.

സാഹിത്യത്തിൽ ചിത്രീകരിച്ചിരിക്കുന്നതുപോലെ ട്രോമ അനുഭവങ്ങളുടെ സങ്കീർണതകൾ മനസിലാക്കുന്നതിൽ അതിന്റെ പരിണാമവും പ്രസക്തിയും പര്യവേക്ഷണം ചെയ്യുന്ന ലിറ്റററി ട്രോമ തിയറിയുടെ ഒരു അവലോകനത്തോടെയാണ് പഠനം ആരംഭിക്കുന്നത്. തുടർന്ന് ഓരോ നോവലും വ്യക്തിഗതമായി വിശകലനം

ചെയ്യുകയും സാമൂഹിക-രാഷ്ട്രീയ സന്ദർഭങ്ങൾ, സ്വഭാവ ചലനാത്മകത, ആഖ്യാന തന്ത്രങ്ങൾ, ബാല്യകാല ട്രോമയുമായി ബന്ധപ്പെട്ട പ്രമേയപരമായ ആശങ്കകൾ എന്നിവ പരിശോധിക്കുകയും ചെയ്യുന്നു. അടുത്ത പാഠ വിശകലനത്തിലൂടെയും സൈദ്ധാന്തിക ഇടപെടലിലൂടെയും, ഈ വിവരണങ്ങൾ ട്രോമയുടെ മാനസികവും വൈകാരികവും സാമൂഹികവുമായ മാനങ്ങളെക്കുറിച്ച് എങ്ങനെ ഉൾക്കാഴ്ച നൽകുന്നുവെന്ന് പഠനം വ്യക്തമാക്കുന്നു.

ഈ പ്രബന്ധം, തിരഞ്ഞെടുത്ത നോവലുകളിലുടനീളം ഒരു താരതമ്യ വിശകലനത്തിൽ ഏർപ്പെടുന്നു. പ്രമേയപരവും ആഖ്യാനപരവുമായ സമാനതകൾ, സാംസ്കാരിക പ്രത്യേകതകൾ, സൈദ്ധാന്തിക പ്രത്യാഘാതങ്ങൾ എന്നിവ എടുത്തുകാണിക്കുന്നു. വൈവിധ്യമാർന്ന സാംസ്കാരിക സന്ദർഭങ്ങളിൽ നിന്നുള്ള ഉൾക്കാഴ്ചകൾ സമന്വയിപ്പിക്കുന്നതിലൂടെ, ബാല്യകാല ട്രോമയുടെ സാഹിത്യത്തിലെ പ്രാതിനിധ്യത്തെക്കുറിച്ചും കൂടുതൽ സൂക്ഷ്മമായ ധാരണയിലേക്ക് സംഭാവന ചെയ്യാൻ ഈ പഠനം ശ്രമിക്കുന്നു. ആത്യന്തികമായി, വ്യക്തിഗതവും കൂട്ടായതുമായ സ്വത്വങ്ങളിൽ ബാല്യകാലത്തെ ട്രോമയുടെ ശാശ്വതമായ സ്വാധീനത്തിലേക്ക് വെളിച്ചം വീശാനാണ് ഈ പ്രബന്ധം ലക്ഷ്യമിടുന്നത്. മൾട്ടിഡിസിപ്ലിനറി, ക്രോസ്-കൾച്ചറൽ സമീപനത്തിലൂടെ, ഈ പഠനം ട്രോമ സാഹിത്യത്തിന്റെ ചക്രവാളങ്ങൾ വിപുലീകരിക്കാനും പ്രതിരോധത്തിനും ആശ്വാസം കണ്ടെത്താനും ഉള്ള മനുഷ്യ ശേഷിയെക്കുറിച്ചുള്ള നമ്മുടെ ധാരണ ആഴത്തിലാക്കാനും ശ്രമിക്കുന്നു.

Chapter 1

Introduction

The pervasive and deeply consequential phenomenon of childhood trauma transcends geographical, cultural and temporal boundaries. Literary representations of traumatised childhoods offer profound insights into the intricacies of human experience by elucidating the psychological, social and cultural dimensions of trauma. This thesis aims to explore and analyse the portrayal of childhood trauma in a selection of literary works from diverse cultural contexts to augment one's understanding of the multifaceted ways in which trauma shapes individual identities and community narratives.

Substantial investigations on the concept of trauma have been undertaken in the disciplines of psychology, sociology and literary scholarship. The intersection of trauma and literature presents a singular opportunity to explore the subjective accounts of trauma survivors as well as of the diverse ways in which trauma is portrayed, navigated and finally transcended in fiction. This study endeavors to unravel the complex fabric of childhood trauma as it is portrayed in literature through a multidisciplinary approach that incorporates literary theory, trauma studies and cultural analysis.

The literary works chosen for detailed examination in this study include fictional narratives from diverse and varied cultural, geographical and historical settings. The primary texts selected for analysis in this thesis are Khaled Hosseini's *The Kite Runner* (2003), Ian McEwan's *Atonement* (2001), Bapsi Sidhwa's *Cracking India* (1991), Uzodinma Iweala's *Beasts of No Nation* (2005) and Tony Morrison's

God Help the Child (2015). Each of these novels presents a different perspective on the intricate relationship of childhood trauma with social and political factors as well as with individual and familial dynamics.

This thesis in its critical analysis of childhood trauma in the select novels also delves into the thematic elements of memory, guilt, redemption, identity and resilience. This research endeavours to analyse the narrative strategies, linguistic tools and cultural contexts that shape the representation of childhood trauma in the selected literary works. It utilises literary trauma theory as a guiding theoretical framework.

The thesis attempts to enhance one's understanding of how childhood trauma manifests in and is refracted through literature by closely scrutinising the textual content and by engaging in comparative analyses. Furthermore, it also hopes to shed light on the human capacity for healing, change and resilience. By exploring the interplay among trauma, memory and storytelling, this research endeavours to elucidate the enduring impacts of childhood trauma on personal and collective histories, as well as the therapeutic potency of narrative as a means to communicate the suffering and resilience inherent in the human experience.

Background and Rationale

The recognition that children inhabit a distinct world characterised by variances in psychological, biological, linguistic and cognitive aspects compared to adults, is a 20th century development. Until then, limited understanding existed regarding the substantial disparities in the needs and aspirations of childhood compared to adulthood. The notion that conflicts engaged in by adults could

detrimentally and uniquely affect the psychological well-being of children was not previously acknowledged.

The 20th century was characterised by a radical transformation in the perception and treatment of children, which substantially reshaped the very concept of childhood itself. This shift in approach was influenced by an array of social, cultural and educational factors that collectively contributed to a fundamental change in societal attitudes towards children.

Disruptive and intrusive occurrences in the 20th century underscored the vulnerability of children while concurrently reinforcing the concept that children possess a consciousness distinct from that of adults. It was emphasised that "childhood is not an unproblematic biological qualifier, but a particular cultural phrasing, historically and politically contingent. Concomitantly, concerns about children being exposed to trauma, … were steadily on the rise"(Kumar and Multani iii).

Childhood trauma is a pervasive and deleterious phenomenon which has far-reaching implications on individual well-being, the stability of society and public health. Trauma can include a broad range of experiences, such as physical or emotional violence, sexual abuse, neglect, marital violence, natural catastrophes, acts of communal violence and the like. Childhood trauma is characterised by exposure to profoundly stressful or adverse events during one's developmental years. These traumatic experiences can exert a significant influence on a child's emotional, psychological and physical maturation, often resulting in enduring consequences that persist into adulthood.

The reported instances of childhood trauma are astoundingly high. The World Health Organization approximates that globally each year, close to 1 billion children aged 2 to 17 experience physical, emotional, or sexual violence, or endure neglect (Butchart np).This figure could probably be only a pointer, given the tendency of cases of childhood trauma to go undetected and unreported. Individuals who have encountered trauma in their childhood are at a heightened risk for various mental health disorders like depression, anxiety, post-traumatic stress disorder (PTSD), as well as substance abuse. Additionally, these individuals may encounter challenges in regulating their emotions, forming and maintaining healthy relationships and coping with stress. The ramifications of childhood trauma extend beyond individual well-being and can impact the wider societal and economic realms by contributing to increased rates of criminal behavior, unemployment and healthcare costs.

Despite the alarming prevalence of childhood trauma and its lasting impact on individuals and society, many cultures continue to underestimate this critical issue and do not address it. Cultural barriers, stigma and shame often prevent individuals from seeking help or openly discussing their experiences, perpetuating a lack of awareness and understanding of the problem. The difficulties experienced by traumatised children and families are further compounded by inadequate access to mental health resources and treatments.

In light of the extensive impact of childhood trauma on the individual and the society, there is an urgent need to prioritise and allocate increased resources towards preventive intervention and support activities. This entails expanding access to culturally competent and research-based mental health treatments for children and their families, as well as putting trauma-informed policies and practices into place in

educational institutions, medical facilities and social service organisations. Moreover, fostering open discussions to remove the stigma around childhood trauma and enhancing awareness on the repercussions of childhood trauma can foster a more inclusive and supportive environment for the communities affected. By cultivating a culture of understanding and support, one can facilitate healing, resilience and recovery among those impacted by childhood trauma.

Literature serves as a powerful tool to examine and communicate the complex and multidimensional nature of trauma. It offers insights into the psychological, emotional and social aspects of this phenomenon. Through the creative use of language, imagery and symbolism, literature skillfully captures the complexities of trauma's impact on the human psyche. Writers delve into the inner worlds of traumatised characters, allowing readers to empathise with their difficulties, anxieties, and goals. This approach fosters a deeper understanding of the lived experience of trauma, which may be challenging to access through traditional research methods alone.

By identifying with the struggles of literary characters, readers gain a more profound appreciation of the emotional turmoil, feelings of fear, humiliation, guilt, and isolation that often accompany traumatic experiences. Through an examination of how wider societal processes interact with individual trauma narratives, academics may reveal patterns of privilege, power and marginalisation that shape the experience of trauma and its aftermath.

Literature provides a space for healing, change and resilience in addition to illuminating the human and societal aspects of trauma. Regaining control over their stories, understanding their experiences and connecting with others who have gone

through similar hardships are all possible for traumatised people through the act of storytelling. Through observing these accounts of survival and restoration, readers are brought back to the realisation that people possess the ability to be resilient, brave, and compassionate when confronted with hardship.

Additionally, research on trauma narrative in literature has useful ramifications for clinical practice, trauma management and public policy. Mental health practitioners may learn a great deal about the subjective experiences of their clients by studying how trauma is portrayed in literature. This knowledge can then be used to shape more compassionate and successful methods of therapy and support. Similarly, legislators and advocates can make use of insights from literary depictions of trauma to address the underlying causes of trauma, encourage healing and recovery and mobilise resources.

Studying trauma narratives in literature provide a deep and comprehensive prism through which to examine the intricacies of trauma and its consequences for people as well as for civilisations. Through investigating the inner lives of traumatised individuals, analysing the cultural and historical backgrounds of trauma and investigating the restorative potential of narratives, academics and professionals can expand their comprehension of trauma, cultivate compassion and unity and support initiatives that advance recovery, fairness and adaptability for everyone impacted by trauma.

This thesis hypothesises that literary narratives provide a discursive space to examine the existential dimensions of childhood trauma in a personalised and contextualised manner. It is hypothesised that literature offers a nuanced understanding of how childhood trauma is depicted by exploring ancillary themes

such as memory, guilt, redemption, societal impact and the interplay between personal and collective trauma. The hypothesis further posits that a close scrutiny of the select fictional narratives shall reveal significant parallels and divergences which highlight the universal and culturally specific dimensions of childhood trauma. The comparative analysis undertaken in this thesis aims to deepen one's comprehension of trauma's enduring effects on individual and collective identities and emphasise the importance of narrative in processing and representing traumatic experiences.

A conscious attempt has been made to choose novels from different cultural and political milieu and by writers from across the globe. This will enable the researcher to explore a range of cultural perspectives on childhood trauma and its literary representation. Each of the texts chosen for study presents a distinct viewpoint on the complexities of childhood trauma and offers ample material for comparative study. Furthermore, each of the five novels examined in the thesis is situated in a period of significant socio-political turmoil or transformation.

Khaled Hosseini's *The Kite Runner* examines childhood trauma against the backdrop of Afghanistan's political unrest. The novel has as its focal point a young Amir's struggle with guilt and redemption following a life-altering betrayal. Hosseini's novel explores the political and personal aspects of trauma against the backdrop of the turbulent events in 20th century Afghanistan, including the Soviet invasion and the ascent of the Taliban regime.

Ian McEwan's *Atonement* is a gripping tale of tragedy, remorse and atonement, set in England during the Second World War. It examines, through the eyes of its protagonist Briony Tallis, the consequences of a single act of false accusation. McEwan also delves into the intricacies of memory, perception and storytelling in the aftermath of tragedy.

Bapsi Sidhwa's *Cracking India* is a moving analysis of the trauma brought about by the partition of the Indian subcontinent in 1947. While navigating the horrific realities of community violence, relocation and loss through the eyes of a young Lenny Sethi, Sidhwa provides a realistic representation of childhood trauma amidst the turmoil of historical changes.

Uzodinma Iweala's *Beasts of No Nation* is a graphic depiction of the harsh realities of child soldiering in West Africa. Iweala examines the grim truths of violence, war and loss from the perspective of his main character Agu. The novel throws light on the ethical and psychological challenges of surviving in the face of turmoil.

Toni Morrison's *God Help the Child* is a poignant analysis of racial identity and trauma in modern America. Morrison explores issues of race, identity, intergenerational trauma and perseverance in the face of hardship through the experiences of the protagonist Bride.

This study aims to illustrate how trauma is shaped by and embedded within specific socio-cultural contexts, while also shedding light on the universal themes and lasting consequences of childhood trauma. By undertaking a comparative analysis of these texts, this research seeks to expand one's understanding of the complexities of trauma and resilience across various cultural and historical contexts. Ultimately, it aspires to contribute to broader discussions on trauma, literature and the human experience by fostering cross-cultural dialogues.

Review of Literature

The study of trauma can be traced back to the late nineteenth century when Jean-Martin Charcot, a French neurologist, conducted research on hysteria. His works and lectures served as the basis for the works of Sigmund Freud, Pierre Janet and Josef Breuer. Freud's investigations conducted in the late nineteenth century laid the foundation for the paradigm of trauma studies. One of the earliest attempts at theorising trauma can be traced back to Freud's and Breuer's collaborative work *Studies on Hysteria* (1895). Freud's *Beyond Pleasure Principle* (1920) is another significant work in the discipline of trauma studies. Freud elucidates the influence of trauma on an individual's ego. He contends that an initial experience of a traumatic incident causes a rupture or disruption in the ego or the inner psyche of a person. This shatters the psyche's protective barrier. This disruption in the protective barrier –the "shield against external stimuli"- can result in traumatic neurosis (Freud, *Pleasure Principle* 25).

Further progress in trauma studies could be seen in the aftermath of the two World Wars. The soldiers who returned from the war were revered for their valour in defending their nations and they were bestowed with honour and glory. However, many soldiers were overcome with recollections of carnage and death. The memories of slaughter and killing at the warfront continued to haunt the troops back from the conflict zone. The soldiers were devastated by the death of their compatriots and their enemies; they were emotionally and mentally broken down by the thoughts of mass murders and deaths.

Abram Kardiner's, *The Traumatic Neuroses of War* (1941) is a significant

work which offers a psychiatric understanding of the traumatic condition caused by the Second World War. His book introduced the notion of 'neurosis of war' and its associated symptoms, including a fixation on trauma and a limited capacity for personality expression (Kardiner v). Kardiner's research anticipated nearly every aspect of current studies on post-traumatic stress disorder (PTSD).

Van der Kolk in *The Body Keeps the Score: Brain, Mind and Body in the Healing of Trauma* (1998) discusses how traumatic memories are difficult to treat. The study looks at how ordinary memories vary from recollections of severely stressful and traumatic situations. It emphasises how dissociation is a basic mechanism that leads to post traumatic stress disorder (PTSD) and the recollection of traumatic memories. The work ends with an elucidation of the distinct nature of painful recollections and how this has therapeutic implications.

Grimshaw in "My Story — Witnessing Narratives of Childhood Trauma and Violence" stresses on the importance of listening to the accounts of young people who have been found guilty of violent crimes. Grimshaw questions whether the narratives told in the media and courtrooms sufficiently explain the relationship between the violent acts of criminals and their early lives. By giving young offenders a platform to share their narratives, the My Story initiative seeks to throw more light on this relationship. The essay highlights the significance of listening to the experiences of these young people to understand their feelings. It also elucidates how storytelling may be a useful tool to comprehend trauma. The studies undertaken by this initiative hold that a large number of its participants who resort to violence and criminal activities do so as a result of traumatic bereavement or abuse they suffered throughout their early years. The paper makes the case that rather than just criminalising these

young individuals, society should place a higher priority on understanding and assistance.

Forna's "Who Owns Your Story? Transcending the Trauma Narrative" examines the idea of trauma and refutes the widespread assumption that trauma results from all forms of pain. The author relates the story of a relative who, although close to being executed during Sierra Leone's civil war, remains unharmed by the ordeal. The author makes the case that not all victims experience trauma and emphasises the need for emotional fortitude and endurance in overcoming hardship. The article argues that, misuse of the term "trauma" may diminish the importance of actual traumas and make it more difficult for people to cope. The idea of "catastrophizing" is also covered by the author, along with how it helps trauma narratives to continue (Forna np). The article's conclusion emphasises the necessity of shifting one's point of view on suffering and of escaping the cycle of trauma.

In *Trauma, Body and Transformation* (2003), Etherington et al examine the long-term impacts of childhood trauma on an individual's physical, emotional and mental health. It features first-person accounts of people who have gone through terrible childhood experiences including abuse or separation. The writers also look at the different ways trauma might show itself, including sickness, addiction, or self-harming habits. They talk about their paths to recovery and well-being for those suffering from trauma. The goal of the work is to support and elucidate trauma theory for academics who are interested in using narrative research methodologies, specialists in trauma studies as well as those who have experienced childhood trauma.

In *Treating Survivors of Childhood Abuse and Interpersonal Trauma: STAIR*

Narrative Therapy (2020) Cloitre et al, explores how trauma impacts people. The book proposes a new paradigm to understand and treat trauma-related disorders. The authors argue that a comprehensive strategy, one that takes into account the complexities of trauma and the variety of ways in which it might affect people is necessary for an extensive solution for the survivors. The authors have proposed a framework —Trauma Affect Control: Guide for Education and Therapy (TARGET) — to aid people to develop resilience and emotional control. They claim that this method is beneficial and useful to treat trauma-related disorders and to improve the overall well-being of an individual.

Trauma studies have undergone significant transitions since the late 20th century with the focus of study shifting from individual psychological responses to more multidisciplinary and culturally contextual methods. A majority of theorists attribute this transition to the Holocaust. Theorists such as Shoshana Felman, Dominick LaCapra and Cathy Caruth were essential in extending the theoretical reach of trauma theory into literary studies. Caruth's work, *Unclaimed Experience: Trauma, Narrative, History* (1996) emphasises that trauma is an unassimilated event that leads to a temporal gap and haunts consciousness through interrupted referentiality. She posits that trauma throws off the orderly flow of time and causes the suppressed feelings to uncontrollably resurface as dreams, flashbacks and repeating behaviours (4-5). Caruth's definition of trauma follows a psychoanalytic and post-structuralist approach. Since trauma is an unsolvable problem of the unconscious, portraying trauma as such implies an intrinsic contradiction between experience and language (Balaev 4).

Nicole Sütterlin in her essay, “The History of Trauma Theory” looks at the progress of trauma theory within literary and cultural studies. She evaluates the ethical and clinical ramifications of trauma theory and focuses on the intimate connections between trauma, language, literature and wounds. The essay looks at the ways in which literature can portray psychological trauma and wounds and highlights the moral duty of literature to bear witness to atrocities which are beyond human comprehension. The study also discusses the necessity to adopt a “more global approach” to trauma studies and emphasises on the need for a more transcultural point of view, particularly when addressing the suffering of ethnic minorities, diasporic groups and postcolonial nations (Sütterlin 20).

In *Haunted Narratives: Life Writing in the Age of Trauma* (2013) Gabriel Rippl et al examine the strategies used by people and groups from various ethnic origins to cope with traumatic events and eerie recollections. The work looks at a variety of life writing genres, such as biographies, autobiographies, as well as fiction with autobiographical inspirations, to see how people deal with and portray their traumatic experiences. The contributors analyse works by various writers like Vikram Seth, Joy Kogawa and Toni Morrison, by drawing insights from diverse academic fields like trauma theory, memory studies, gender studies and post-colonial studies. It also discusses whether or not concepts from clinical psychology may be applied to the study of culture and literature. The book is a significant addition to the ongoing discussions about trauma, memory and life writing.

Yali Yang in the article “The Trauma and Fragmentation Narrative in Amy Tan’s *The Kitchen God’s Wife* and Toni Morrison’s *Beloved*” examines the

connection between trauma literature and disjointed narrative structures. The article traces the foundation of trauma theory in psychoanalytic theory and covers the development of research in trauma theory to encompass cultural and historical traumas, in the 1990s. The essay stresses on the significance of trauma literature in describing and comprehending traumatic events, especially in the context of marginalised populations. It also looks at how fragmented narratives are used in postmodernist literature and emphasises how they effectively communicate the enigmatic and unfathomable aspects of trauma.

Kiser et al, in “Who Are We, But for the Stories We Tell: Family Stories and Healing” (2010) covers the significance of family storytelling and how storytelling might help traumatised families heal. The writers examine the roles that family storytelling plays in passing down values and beliefs as well as in organising and making sense of experiences. They also talk about coordinated viewpoints and shared meaning-making, two abilities that family members employ while sharing narratives. To facilitate family narrative and advance healing, the essay places a strong emphasis on the therapist’s involvement.

Adrienne Kertzer researches the connection between the idea of trauma and children's literature. Kertzer’s essay “Trauma Studies” looks at how child protagonists in historical fiction, nonfiction and picture novels subvert the conventional wisdom around traumatic memory by acting as witnesses to their own or other people’s terrible recollections. To emphasise the moral complexities of traumatic memory and the difficulties in depicting historical trauma in literature for young readers, the work analyses several texts and takes a look at some of the controversial approaches to trauma in children’s literary studies.

I.A. Nabergoj in “Children Without Childhood: The Emotionality of Orphaned Children and Images of their Rescuers in Selected Works of English and Canadian Literature” examines the representation of orphans in literature and also the ties the orphans develop with the people who rescue them from the orphanages or workhouses. The study concentrates on Anne Michael’s *Fugitive Pieces* and the novels of Charles Dickens particularly *David Copperfield*, *Oliver Twist* and *Great Expectations*. Dickens and Michael show the tough circumstances that orphaned children have to face. Nabergoj avers that the main message of these narratives is that good may win over evil as vulnerable children in these narratives are eventually rescued from their terrible situations.

Helen Berents in the article “This is my Story”: Children’s War Memoirs and Challenging Protectionist Discourses” (2019) investigates the relevance of children’s war memoirs in undermining the prevailing narrative of children in war as passive victims. Berents points out that these war memoirs, which highlight children's autonomy and resilience, present a counter-narrative that may help one comprehend better the experiences of children in conflict zones. Berents also criticises the protectionist rhetoric that frequently characterises conversations about children in conflict and she advocates a more participative approach that recognizes children as active players in finding solutions to war. She also argues that by taking children’s experiences seriously and by providing them with an avenue to express their narratives, one can understand in a better manner the difficulties of children in war zones. The paper explores many popular children’s war memoirs and emphasises the importance of ethically analysing and engaging with these works.

Christa Schönfelder's *Wounds and Words: Childhood and Family Trauma in Romantic and Postmodern Fiction* (2013) studies in detail the theme of trauma in literature and the early examinations of the wounded mind by writers and psychiatrists with a special emphasis on the Romantic period. The work looks at the relationship between Romantic literature and psychology as well as the association between psychology and postmodern fiction. It looks at how scientific methodologies may improve one's knowledge of trauma and offers new perspectives on the poetics, politics and ethics of trauma fiction. *Wounds and Words* touches on a variety of topics, including childhood, incest, mental illness and post-traumatic stress disorder. It includes references to major personalities such as Mary Wollstonecraft, Percy Bysshe Shelley and William Godwin.

In *Childhood Traumas: Narratives and Representations* (2019) Kumar and Multani et al study the experiences and violent encounters that teenagers experienced between the 18th and 21st centuries. The book addresses narratives of childhood abuse from diverse historical, geographical and cultural situations and focuses on strategies resorted to by children to cope with physical and psychological abuse. Though it is frequently referred to be the "century of the child," the 20th century was marked by several cataclysmic events (like the World Wars, the Holocaust, the Partition of India, and the Vietnam War) which inflicted enormous trauma on children (Kumar and Multani iii). The articles in this book examine how children were victimised during war and ethnic violence and subject to forced migration and rape. This study also reveals how traumatised children grapple with conceptions of nation, ethnicity, identity and religion. The authors use several artistic medium such as literature,

paintings, films and popular culture, to study the long-term effects of violence and neglect on children. The work also features ideas to assist children who were abused in their road to recovery and resilience.

In “Traumatic Experiences and their Representation in Narratives: A Study” Jena and Samantray explain the case that various traumatic events may be represented and understood through the use of the narrative aspects and methods that are inherent in the narratives. The psychological trauma of various individuals, the narrative's storyline (event), characters and topic are examined. To investigate how these methods help represent the psychological trauma of the characters in the narratives, these researchers also looked at narrative techniques like backstory, flash-forward, frame story, events in parallel, storytelling shift, multiple perceptions, repetitive designations, epiphany, amplification, mental imagery, tone, use of repetitive sentence structure, hamartia, peripetia and comparison.

Ayyildiz in the article “Traumatized Perception of the Self and Time in Ian McEwan’s *The Cement Garden* and *The Child in Time*” examines how the traumatised characters view time and themselves, as well as how much the characters in the novels studied are able to move past the effects of their terrible experiences. The study employs trauma theory. The subjects of the two novels studied are traumatised individuals who, as a result of their terrible experiences, have lost their conscious sense of themselves and of time. *The Cement Garden* portrays the difficulties four siblings Jack, Julie, Tom and Sue face following the loss of their mother. *The Child in Time* show how Stephen and Julie process the loss of their little daughter Kate while Charles, a friend of Stephen’s, is acting out his terrible

upbringing by going back to his youth. After critically analysing the reaction of the characters' to their traumas, it is concluded that trauma alters people's perceptions of time and the self. This often results in tragedies when people's defence mechanisms lose control over the reality of the trauma.

Donovan and Ustundag investigate how graphic novels might help people comprehend and deal with traumatic situations. They contend that graphic narratives of trauma, which fused written text with visual imagery, provide a distinct viewpoint that goes beyond traditional written testimony. Graphic narratives might communicate the complexity and embodied sensations that could be difficult to express in textual form by emphasising the subtleties of traumatic situations. The authors propose that these visual narratives may facilitate access to social services for rehabilitation and increase societal awareness of the dynamics and effects of trauma. They examine Una's graphic novel *Becoming Unbecoming* as an illustration of how graphic narratives may delve into the relationships between concerns of social justice and individual and societal experiences of trauma. The authors hold that visual narratives provide a forum to discuss the psychological, physiological and economic expenses associated with survivor syndrome, which are frequently disregarded in courtroom testimony. These narratives may result in improved justice outcomes for trauma survivors.

A cursory examination of the review of literature reveals that a sustained analysis of cross-cultural literary narratives on childhood trauma is absent. This thesis aims to fill this gap by conducting a comprehensive analysis of the portrayal of childhood trauma in a variety of literary works from different cultural backgrounds. The goal is to enhance one's comprehension of the multifaceted ways in which

trauma influences individual identities and community narratives.

Significance of the Study

It is necessary to acknowledge the significant effects of childhood trauma on people, societies and civilisations to fully appreciate the relevance of this study. Through an analysis of how traumatised childhoods are portrayed in certain novels across cultural contexts, this research adds to several important fields of academic study and practical applications.

First of all, by using literature as a lens, this study illuminates the common human experience of trauma. Trauma is a very human experience that cuts beyond social categories and is not restricted by geography or cultural barriers. Through an examination of the representation of trauma in stories from Afghanistan, England, British India, Africa and America, this study highlights the universal themes of pain, resilience and recovery that define the experience of trauma across cultural contexts.

Second, by examining the intersections between childhood trauma and other social factors including race, gender and nationality, this study contributes subtly to the area of trauma studies. Each book chosen for analysis presents a different angle on how trauma relates to different facets of identity. It emphasises the complexity of trauma's impacts on both individuals and societies. By scrutinising these intersections critically, the study contributes to a more comprehensive understanding of trauma.Thirdly, this research adds to one’s knowledge of how trauma is processed and represented in literature. People have traditionally used literature as a way to find catharsis amid chaos and make sense of their suffering. This research elucidates how writers use narrative strategies, symbolism and imagery to express the visceral truths

of trauma and its aftermath through rigorous textual analysis and interaction with literary trauma theory. This study sheds light on the literary techniques employed to portray trauma and provides insights into the efficacy of storytelling as a therapeutic and educational tool.

Educators, mental health specialists and legislators can also benefit practically from this research. This study offers educators who want to integrate trauma-informed pedagogy into their curricula useful tools by exposing the many representations of childhood trauma in literature. Furthermore, mental health practitioners might utilise the knowledge gathered from this study to guide their therapy strategies for trauma recovery. To enable attempts to adopt trauma-informed policies and programmes in a better and more efficient manner, policymakers should also have a deeper knowledge of the cultural and socioeconomic variables that contribute to childhood trauma.

This research, therefore, is important not just for researchers of literary and trauma studies but also for educators, mental health practitioners, legislators and the general public. This study develops a thorough understanding of trauma's effects on people and society by analysing how traumatised childhoods are portrayed in select novels from various cultural perspectives. This opens the door to greater empathy, awareness and healing.

Research Questions

The thesis aims to investigate select literary narratives of childhood trauma. Specifically the research seeks to answer the following questions.

1) In what ways do literary texts illustrate the effects of childhood trauma in their specific cultural contexts?

2) How does literary trauma theory offer a framework to comprehend the story and the narrative devices employed in the fictional narratives chosen for study?

3) How are the experiences of trauma in these novels shaped by memory and narrative?

4) In what ways do these narratives advance one's knowledge of the social and political contexts that either cause or worsen childhood trauma?

5) How are individual experiences of childhood trauma across various social, political and cultural contexts similar to and distinct from one another?

6) How do the writers provide insights into the global perspective of childhood trauma through the prism of their distinct socio-cultural milieu?

Objectives

The thesis' investigative analysis of childhood trauma in literature is directed towards the following aims and objectives:

1) To evaluate how childhood trauma is portrayed in each of the novels selected for study, in its cultural and historical background. This goal entails a thorough analysis of each work, especially by looking at how the historical and cultural background influence and inform the portrayal of childhood trauma. The analysis will focus on how the story is woven together against the backdrop of major historical events, cultural norms and societal dynamics. It also looks at how these factors affect the characters' experiences and perceptions of trauma.

2) To critically examine the narrative techniques employed in these novels, using the

framework of literary trauma theory. The aim is to analyse the narrative strategies employed in the texts selected for study using theoretical tools and precepts from literary trauma so as to provide readers with a better understanding of how trauma is portrayed in literature. This involves analysing the story's narrative structure, character development and the way trauma is represented through language and symbols.

3) To investigate memory and storytelling within the larger framework of the portrayals of the horrific events in the novels. This objective requires a meticulous analysis of how memory and storytelling work in each text's trauma-filled setting. The main aim is to comprehend how the authors depict these processes and how the characters' attempts to narrate their traumatic events and memories affect their path towards coping or healing.

4) To look into how these literary works depict childhood trauma from a sociological and political perspective. The purpose of this objective is to understand the larger social and political themes intertwined with the accounts of childhood trauma. The thesis seeks to understand how outside forces like conflict, political upheaval, or cultural standards affect the development or worsening of trauma and how these influences are represented in the stories.

5) To perform a comparative examination of how childhood trauma is portrayed in the chosen novels. The intention here is to highlight the similarities and variations in the ways that childhood trauma is portrayed in various social, cultural and political contexts. The similarities among experiences and the distinctive cultural specificities that influence them will be emphasised in this comparative study.

Methodology

The thesis employs a qualitative research approach and combines aspects of literary criticism and cultural studies. The primary texts chosen for study are examined through the framework of literary trauma theory. Textual analysis and careful reading of the chosen books are the major methodological approaches adopted. Each of the primary texts is scrutinised for its storytelling methods, character development, thematic components and the historical and cultural settings against which childhood trauma is represented. The stylistic features employed by the authors in representing trauma are analysed through a detailed examination of key passages and situations that portray terrible occurrences or their aftermath.

The analysis is guided by the theoretical framework of literary trauma theory. The thesis draws from pioneering research by academics like Geoffrey Hartman, Shoshana Felman, and Cathy Caruth. The research method investigates how trauma interrupts with memory, subjectivity and narrative construction. It also takes into account how language, metaphor and symbolism are used to communicate traumatic events.

Each of the primary texts chosen for study is positioned within its distinct historical and cultural milieu to enhance one's understanding of how social influences mould the lives of children who have undergone traumatic experiences. This study looks at ethnic and gender politics as well as the socio-political factors in each narrative to determine how personal and societal traumas connect. The chosen works are compared to find recurring themes, storytelling techniques and cultural quirks. This comparative study highlights the fundamental characteristics of human experience and helps one to understand how childhood trauma is portrayed and interpreted within various cultural frameworks.

The thesis follows an interdisciplinary approach that incorporates perspectives from postcolonial theory, psychology and sociology. This multidisciplinary approach enriches the research and analysis by allowing a more comprehensive investigation of the intricate mechanisms at work in the literary portrayal of childhood trauma.

The delicate nature of trauma narratives necessitates paying meticulous adherence to ethical principles at every stage of the research process. Respect is given to the experiences of the characters portrayed in the novels as well as to the integrity of the objectives of the author. Furthermore, rigorous adherence to ethical rules concerning citation and acknowledgement of sources guarantees academic integrity and openness. The novels themselves serve as the main source of data for this research, which is further supported by academic papers, critical essays and theoretical works on literary analysis and trauma studies. The interpretation of the main texts is informed by the theoretical frameworks, critical viewpoints and context that are provided by secondary sources.

Iterative readings and the coding of important themes, motifs and narrative patterns about childhood trauma are part of the study of the main texts. Inductive reasoning and careful examination of recurrent imagery, symbols and character dynamics are used to identify themes. Since the data analysis process is iterative, as the research advances, new connections and insights can be made. The technique used in this research blends a theoretically grounded approach with meticulous textual analysis to investigate how childhood trauma is portrayed in literature. This research attempts to provide a detailed knowledge of how trauma narratives are formed and perceived across various cultural contexts by integrating numerous methodological perspectives.

Literary Trauma Theory – An Overview

The development of trauma theory in literary studies has followed a complex path characterised by changes in theoretical frameworks, multidisciplinary collaborations and conceptual framework expansions. Trauma theory was first based on psychoanalytic methods, but it has since evolved to include more societal, historical and narrative elements.

Early Freudian psychoanalysis, in particular, the concept of traumatic neurosis and the idea of the uncanny, as expounded in his article *Beyond the Pleasure Principle*, served as a major source of inspiration for trauma theory. According to Freud, trauma is an indescribable event that defies description and causes symptoms of dissociation and repression. This early psychoanalytic viewpoint, which concentrated on intrapsychic memory and suppression processes, saw trauma as a unique, psychic phenomenon.

However, Freudian psychoanalysis gave way to more multidisciplinary and culturally contextual methods with the advent of trauma studies in the late 20th century. Trauma theory started to integrate viewpoints from cultural studies, post-structuralism and postcolonial theory, emphasising how trauma is socially constructed and how it intersects with identity, power and representation. The cultural uniqueness of trauma narratives was studied by academics such as Anne Whitehead, Judith Herman, and Roger Luckhurst. They looked at how historical occurrences like war, genocide and colonialism shaped both individual and collective experiences of trauma. This shift in trauma theory towards a more cultural perspective highlighted the significance of context in comprehending the creation, dissemination and reception of traumatic stories.

Individual or collective traumatic experiences, in Caruth's view, can only be understood indirectly through an interrupted referentiality that indicates the significance of the past as a performance or replication. According to this model, trauma is perceived as a shock that fractures the mind's perception of time, resulting in emotional distress and an incapacity to comprehend the significance of the incident. Both the dissociative character of trauma and its linguistic abnormality are indicated when the traumatic past becomes a recurrent absence. "A shock that appears to work very much like a bodily threat but is a break in the mind's experience of time…," is how Caruth defines trauma (Caruth *Unclaimed Experience* 61).

In addition, the early Freudian and Caruthian viewpoints had limits, which gave rise to the pluralistic model of trauma theory. This promoted a more inclusive and comprehensive approach to trauma research. Advocates of the pluralistic paradigm, such as Ann Cvetkovich, Greg Forter and Naomi Mandel, stressed the necessity to contextualise trauma within larger societal frameworks and the diversity of traumatic experiences. This pluralistic perspective acknowledges trauma as a complicated, multidimensional phenomenon that interacts with nationality, ethnicity, gender and socioeconomic concerns.

All the same, Freud's theories—especially when viewed through the eyes of academics such as Cathy Caruth—have had a substantial impact on the study of trauma in literature and have helped to provide a more nuanced understanding of the intricate interactions between traumatic experiences that are both individual and collective. According to Rothberg, "the traumatic realist project is an attempt to produce the event as an object of knowledge and to transform its readers so that they are forced to acknowledge their relationship to posttraumatic culture, rather than to reflect the event mimetically"(140).

To expand on one's knowledge of the psychological and physiological ramifications of trauma, trauma theory has recently continued to develop and include viewpoints from cognitive psychology, affect theory and neurobiology. Researchers like Ruth Leys, Joseph LeDoux and Bessel van der Kolk, who have studied the neurological foundations of trauma, have looked at how traumatic events are stored in the brain and how these traumatic events show up as symptoms of PTSD and other trauma-related diseases.

The growth of trauma theory within literary studies is indicative of a vibrant, multidisciplinary field that keeps growing and changing in response to fresh theoretical and empirical discoveries. Trauma theory is a comprehensive and multifaceted framework that integrates knowledge from psychology, sociology, neuroscience and cultural studies to analyse how traumatic events are portrayed and interpreted and to study their cultural significance in literature.

To provide important insights into the depiction, interpretation and cultural importance of traumatic events, literary trauma theory entails several fundamental theoretical ideas that guide the research of trauma stories in literature. Based on multidisciplinary research and influenced by sociocultural, narrative and psychoanalytic viewpoints, these ideas offer a framework to comprehend the intricacies of trauma and its impacts on people as well as society.

The understanding of trauma's disruptive effects on narrative coherence and subjective experience is the fundamental tenet of literary trauma theory. Traumatic situations frequently cause awareness to become fragmented, which can result in jumbled memories, broken narratives and a post-traumatic sensation of disorientation. Literary devices like non-linear narrative, jumbled grammar and fragmented imagery

are examples of how this fragmentation is mirrored in texts, reflecting the broken character of traumatic experience.

The notion of unconscious repetition, which occurs when traumatic memories are obsessively re-enacted through repeating behaviours, intrusive thoughts and recurring pictures, is another key idea in literary trauma theory. Trauma theorists, drawing on Freudian psychoanalysis, contend that recurrence feeds a vicious cycle of re-traumatisation and psychological discomfort because it represents an unsuccessful attempt to understand or overcome painful experiences. This subject frequently appears in literature as motifs of repetition, circularity and unresolved conflicts, emphasising the trauma survivors' ongoing experiences with it.

According to trauma theory, the complete effects of traumatic events cannot become apparent until after the fact. This emphasises the delayed and belated nature of trauma. Many a times, traumatising events are difficult to understand right away and they only become apparent later on in life as delayed emotions, flashbacks, or physical symptoms. In trauma narratives, the idea of belatedness complicates the link between past, present and future by challenging linear conceptions of time and causation. Writers might use analeptic narration, temporal interruptions and retroactive reflections to illustrate how trauma affects a person's identity and memory over time.

Literary trauma theory acknowledges the significance of testifying and bearing witness to traumatic occurrences in order to validate the experiences of survivors. Bearing witness to the unimaginable, giving voice to stories that have been hushed, and admitting the existences of trauma are all accomplished through testimonies. Writing about trauma can allow survivors to take back control of their experiences and address the silences and erasures that frequently follow. Some literary forms in

which the act of witnessing can be expressed include autobiographical fiction, confessional poetry and first-person narratives.

The idea of intergenerational transmission, which holds that trauma's consequences are transmitted down through succeeding generations and shape family relations, cultural memory and collective identity, is another topic covered by trauma theorists. Traumatic events have the potential to make a long-lasting impression on offspring, affecting their attitudes, actions and mental health. Intergenerational trauma is frequently portrayed in literature using themes of inheritance, legacy and haunting to highlight the lasting effects of prior tragedies on people today as well as on communities.

Literary trauma theory provides a sophisticated framework to examine the portrayal and understanding of traumatic events in literature by addressing these fundamental theoretical ideas. Through an examination of the interactions among fragmentation, repetition, belatedness, witnessing and intergenerational transmission, researchers can acquire an important understanding of the intricacies of trauma narratives and their wider cultural, historical and psychological implications.

Structure of the Thesis

This thesis is divided into nine chapters. The chapters are divided in such a manner so as to offer an organised and detailed examination of how childhood trauma is portrayed in the novels selected for study. Chapter 1 "Introduction" is the introductory chapter. It provides the background information, explains the purpose and importance of the study and presents the main research questions and objectives. This chapter includes a brief review of literature and gives an overview of the theoretical frameworks and methodological techniques used in the research. It sets the stage for the following chapters.

Chapter 2 "*The Kite Runner:* Navigating Personal and Political Trauma" explores Khaled Hosseini's *The Kite Runner* in detail. It emphasizes how the book depicts political and personal pain. The chapter also examines themes of guilt, atonement and cultural identity by looking at Amir's experiences in Afghanistan against the backdrop of several historical events.

Chapter 3 "*Atonement:* Intersection of Guilt and Traumatic Memory" investigates Ian McEwan's *Atonement.* It delves into the intricate relationship between childhood imagination and guilt, in the aftermath of a tragedy. This chapter looks at Briony Talli's untrustworthy account and how it affects one's comprehension of trauma and memory, within the larger socio-political background of England in the 20th century.

Chapter 4 "*Cracking India:* Childhood Amidst National Trauma" studies Bapsi Sidhwa's *Cracking India* in detail and looks into how childhood trauma is portrayed in the context of political unrest and communal violence. This chapter highlights the intersections of trauma and cultural conflict by examining Lenny's viewpoint as a young child negotiating the intricacies of identity and belonging during the Partition of India.

Chapter 5 "*Beasts of No Nation:* The Brutality of Child Soldiering" explores the horrific realities of child soldiering and the psychological effects of war through an analysis of Uzodinma Iweala's novel *Beasts of No Nation*. The novel narrates the story of Agu, a young boy forced to join rebel forces and commit gruesome acts of violence. Themes like lost innocence, moral uncertainty and the human spirit's resilience in the face of overwhelming suffering are all explored in this chapter.

Chapter 6 "*God Help the Child:* Childhood Trauma and Racial Identity" studies in detail Toni Morrison's *God Help the Child.* It delves into the relationship between race, identity and childhood trauma in modern-day America. This chapter focuses on Morrison's examination of intergenerational trauma, the history of slavery and prejudice and Bride's path towards self-discovery and healing.

Chapter 7 "Comparative Analysis: Cross-Cultural Perspectives on Childhood Trauma" provides a comparative analysis of the novels selected for study. This chapter highlights the similarities and differences between various points of view on childhood trauma. In addition to analysing recurring themes, storytelling devices and cultural specificities, this chapter synthesises ideas from all of the texts and considers the larger theoretical ramifications for trauma studies.

Chapter 8, "Conclusion", summarises the main findings of the thesis and highlights the contributions made to the field of trauma studies. Chapter 9, "Recommendations", offers suggestions for further research in the area of childhood trauma.

Chapter 2

The Kite Runner: Navigating Personal and Political Trauma

Childhood trauma, particularly that which is emotional or psychological in nature, has the potential to significantly and enduringly impact an individual's sense of self and the trajectories of the individual's life. The protagonist of Khaled Hosseini's *The Kite Runner*, Amir, struggles with the consequences of his deeds as well as the political turbulence in Afghanistan. This chapter seeks to enhance one's understanding of childhood trauma within the larger context of political upheaval as well as personal turmoil by undertaking a detailed analysis of the novel *The Kite Runner*.

Hosseini skilfully crafts a story of friendship, treachery and redemption against the violent historical background of Afghanistan. This chapter attempts to study the intricacies of Amir's and Hassan's traumatic experiences and the wider ramifications of the socio-political conditions of Afghanistan in intensifying their trauma. This chapter also explores how Hosseini uses narrative elements like symbolism, flashbacks and characterisation to illuminate the complex psychological aspects of trauma. It aims to elucidate the intricate network of feelings and memories that define Amir's traumatic experiences by analysing significant moments in the novel — ranging from the exhilarating kite-flying competition to the emotionally distressing encounter with Amir's past.

The Kite Runner primarily recounts the story of Amir and Hassan. Their lives are deeply influenced by the political turmoil that engulfs Afghanistan during the

latter half of the 20th century, including the Soviet occupation, the disruption caused by the Mujahedin warlords and the emergence of the Taliban. The narrative is divided into three distinct parts, with each part taking place in a separate time period. The first part takes place during Amir's formative years in Kabul, where he forges a deep bond with Hassan, who is the family servant Ali's son. During a kite-flying tournament, Amir is unable to rescue Hassan from a violent attack by their adversary, Assef. Amir's lack of courage results in guilt and an enduring sense of shame that haunts him for the rest of his life.

The subsequent portion of the narrative unfolds in the United States, where Amir and his father, Baba, relocate following the Soviet invasion of Afghanistan. Amir grapples with his sense of belonging in the world and his relationship with his father continues to be tense. In the third segment of the novel, Amir goes back to Afghanistan and discovers that the Taliban has executed Hassan. Amir's feelings of culpability and remorse lead him to find Sohrab, Hassan's son. Amir endeavours to find redemption by providing Sohrab with an improved existence in the United States.

Contextual Background: Afghanistan's Turmoil

The socio-political landscape of 20th century Afghanistan was marked by struggles for power among different tribal groups as well as numerous other internal conflicts. Significant developments occurred under Amanullah Khan's leadership between1919 and 1929, including the creation of a constitution, advancements in education and campaigns to liberate women. However, these progressive measures were met with opposition from conservative groups, which forced Amanullah to quit. Following a series of coups in the middle of the 20th century, Afghanistan saw its first

republican coup in 1973.

Afghanistan's social fabric was terribly altered by these political shifts that took place between the turn of the century and the Soviet invasion in 1979. In 1989, the Soviet Union evacuated its forces from Afghanistan, resulting in a power struggle between the Mujahedin and other parties like the Taliban. This struggle led to the Civil War that lasted from 1992 to 1996. "The Taliban forces that proceeded to advance through Afghanistan in the winter of 1994–1995 were equipped with tanks, APCs, artillery, and even aircraft" (Collins 13).After seizing control of Afghanistan in 1996, the Taliban imposed harsh laws based on an extreme interpretation of Sharia law.

America declared war on the Taliban after the attack on the Twin Towers. The Taliban submitted to the combined might of the Western Forces. Some Taliban members escaped to Pakistan and other nearby nations, while others took refuge in mountain caves. The battle toppled the Taliban government and Hamid Karzai was sworn in as president of Afghanistan with heavy backing from the United States.

> That December, Pashtuns, Tajiks, Uzbeks, and Hazaras gathered in Bonn and, under the watchful eye of the UN, began the process that might someday end over twenty years of unhappiness in their *watan*. Hamid Karzai's caracul hat and green *chapan* became famous (Hosseini 316).

Socio-political Dimensions of Childhood Trauma

The Kite Runner explores the socio-political dimensions of childhood trauma in Afghanistan, particularly the incessant conflicts and wars that ravaged Afghanistan in the late 20th century as well as the racial and ethnic tensions between the Pashtuns and Hazaras. Much of the action in the novel takes place in the 1980s. When the war

with the Russian forces reaches its peak, there is a constant noise of bombardment, including heavy shelling and gunfire. Curfews are imposed abruptly, without any prior warning. At this critical juncture, Baba, Amir and many others decide to escape to Peshawar (and from Peshawar Baba and Amir go the US) aboard a packed fuel tanker.

Pakistan, especially, Peshawar has been a safe-haven for the Pashtun refugees from Afghanistan. Ethnic commonality has been the main reason why many Afghans chose to seek refuge in Pakistan. The Pashtun community which constitutes one-third of the population in Afghanistan and one-fifth of the population in Pakistan is split along the Pakistan-Afghanistan border. Pashtuns routinely traversed the border separating Afghanistan and Pakistan and the movement to Pakistan increased as crisis augmented in Afghanistan (Monsutti 253).

The emergence of radical groups during the resistance and their eventual takeover of the country drastically altered the social and cultural scene in Afghanistan. The previously dynamic and diversified society underwent significant transformations that had a great impact on the lives of people. *The Kite Runner* effectively depicts the intricate relationship between governmental changes and the complexities of Afghan society. The lives of the protagonists serve as a microcosm of the larger more significant changes in society, illustrating the enduring effects of political upheavals on intimate personal relationships, personal identity and the nation of Afghanistan.

Four decades of conflict, instability, economic hardship and bloodshed resulted in millions of Afghans fleeing their country of birth country and seeking asylum and refugee status in neighbouring countries or other countries abroad (Kuschminder & Dora 123). Baba opts to escape from Afghanistan and relocate to

America in order to safeguard himself and Amir from the perils of the Soviet-Afghan conflict. For Baba, the relocation signifies a substantial decline in social standing and a challenge to acclimatise to the new American culture.

The novel delves into the cultural influences on Amir. The narrative focuses on Amir's formative years in Kabul during which he was deeply influenced by Afghan traditions and rituals. Afghan culture is centred on familial relationships, loyalty and honour. Amir forges a deep sense of belonging to his group. In Afghanistan, social and cultural factors play a major role in determining interpersonal dynamics. The relationship between Amir and Hassan, despite their camaraderie and brotherhood is influenced by their social standing as well by their ethnicities.

Afghanistan is a really "diverse country that has been under the control of the Pashtun majority at the top level. Before the Saur Revolution, however, ethnicity had never again played a significant role in Afghan politics" (Rais, "Conflict in Afghanistan" 17). The ethnic composition of Afghanistan's population is diverse:

> the Pashtuns are the largest ethnic group, with 42% in the total population, followed by the Tajiks 24%, Hazaras 16% and Uzbeks 12%. The remainder 6% includes the ethnic minorities, Turkmens, Kazakhs, Baluchi and others. (Samay Ram 44).

There have been numerous conflicts among these various ethnic groups. The disarray among these ethnic groups has been a source of concern for a long time. However, the most egregious division has always been with the Hazaras and the Pashtuns and the relationship between these two groups is characterised by historical tension and contemporary conflict.

The roots of the Hazara Pasthun conflict can be traced to the late 19th and early 20th century. The Hazaras first came to Afghanistan in the thirteenth and fourteenth centuries and predominantly settled in the mountainous territory in the central highlands of the country. This area came to be known as Hazarajat. In his pursuit of supremacy over various territories in Afghanistan, Amir Abdur Rahman, who was emir of Afghanistan from 1880 to 1901, captured Hazarajat. Following the conquest, the natives of the region were subject to ruthless treatment by the emir, who also happened to be a Pashtun. The Hazaras who resisted the brutal mistreatment were subject to torture and then executed. The condition of the Hazaras deteriorated throughout the reign of the emir and they were forced to leave their land and move to other parts of Afghanistan, Iran or Pakistan in search of a better life. The Pashtuns regarded themselves as a superior ethnic group and have continually treated the Hazaras in a demeaning manner.

Hosseini chronicles the experiences of the Pashtun and Hazara ethnic groups in Afghanistan and lays emphasis on their notable distinctions in social, political and economic dominance. “The book said that my people had killed the Hazaras, driven them from their lands, burned their homes, and sold their women” (Hosseini 14).When the Hazaras revolted against the persecution of the Pashtuns, the Pashtuns suppressed them, depriving them of several social rights, including the right to an education. Amir refers to this point too in the novel

> An entire chapter dedicated to Hassan’s people! In it, I read that my people, the Pashtuns, had persecuted and oppressed the Hazaras. It said the Hazaras had tried to rise against the Pashtuns in the nineteenth century, but the Pashtuns had quelled them with unspeakable violence. (14)

These passages where the young Amir uses the words “my people” and “Hassan’s people” to refer to the Pashtuns and Hazaras respectively reveals an internalisation of ethnic discrimination even in a child like Amir, who grows up in a fairly inclusive environment(Hosseini 14).It also highlights the deep-seated animosity between the two groups. Amir and Hassan are depicted in the novel as the two opposing foundations of the same society: the mighty and the weak, Pashtun and Hazara, Sunni and Shi’a and affluent and impoverished. Amir recollects “I became what I am today at the age of twelve, on a frigid overcast day in the winter of 1975. I remember the precise moment, crouching behind a crumbling mud wall, peeking into the alley near the frozen creek”(14).

Amir is alluding to the incident in which Hassan is sexually assaulted by a gang of young Pashtun boys who harboured animosity towards the Hazara community. Hosseini reveals the harsh situation of Hazaras in Afghanistan and the ill-treatment the Hazaras receive at the hands of the Pashtuns. The author reiterates the ethnicity issue at the end of this chapter with Amir’s clarification: “I thought of the life I had lived until the winter of 1975 came and changed everything. And made me what I am today” (14).

Amir is raised in a society marked by ethnic divisions and social hierarchy. His journey to redemption becomes a poignant exploration of the impact of childhood trauma on an individual’s psyche. Amir’s experiences also shed light on the complex web of societal conflict, particularly the racial and ethnic tensions between the Pashtuns and the Hazaras, in Afghanistan. Afghanistan’s political, social and cultural structure fosters prejudice, giving Pashtuns like Amir and Baba access to economic and educational opportunities while Hazaras like Hassan and his father Ali are always disadvantaged.

Hassan endures mistreatment, intimidation and sexual assault at the hands of Pashtuns. His submissive position is made more vulnerable by his allegiance to Amir's family, leaving him open to abuse. Hassan suffers because of Amir's cowardice and envy. As the novel progresses, Hassan's presence continues to cast a shadow on Amir's life. But Hassan continues to lives his life as if nothing has happened. However Hassan is emotionally worn out and lacks confidence.

The Pashtuns believe that they alone should occupy Afghanistan and consequently, they turn the Hazaras into the targets of "ethnic cleansing" to establish Afghanistan as the "land of Pashtuns" (Hosseini 40). The Hazaras are treated like slaves; the novel throws light on the discrimination faced by the Hazaras, including oppression and captivity. Hazara servants work for rich Pashtun homes in exchange for food and housing. For instance Hassan, a Hazara, is made to serve the Pashtun Amir, who eventually betrays him.

The novel highlights the dehumanising experiences of characters like Ali and Hassan. The Pashtuns had traditionally oppressed the ethnic Hazaras. The novel gives numerous instances of how Hazaras are mocked:

> They [Assef and his gang] called him flat-nosed because of Ali and Hassan's characteristic Hazara Mongoloid features. For years, that was all I knew about the Hazaras, that they were Mogul descendants, and that they looked a little like Chinese people. (9).

Of all the neighbourhood boys who tortured Ali, Assef was by far the most relentless. He was, in fact, the originator of the "Babalu jeer" (38). Assef remarks "We are the true Afghans, the pure Afghans, not this Flat-Nose here. His people pollute our homeland, our *watan*. They dirty our blood" (40). The novel depicts the harsh realities

that Ali and Hassan encounter, including the verbal abuse and the jeer they face because of their Hazara heritage. The story emphasises how these discriminatory actions affect the people and their fight for acceptance and respect.

The Hazaras who have been subjugated for centuries bear the brutality of the Pashtuns. Their ancestors followed the path of acquiescence, making them mentally weak to oppose any form of cruelty against themselves. Hassan silently bears the acts of Assef:

> Assef knelt behind Hassan, put his hands on Hassan's hips and lifted his bare buttocks. He kept one hand on Hassan's back and undid his own belt buckle with his free hand. He unzipped his jeans. Dropped his underwear. He positioned himself behind Hassan. Hassan didn't struggle. Didn't even, whimper. He moved head slightly and I caught a glimpse of his face. Saw this resignation in it. It was a look of the lamb. (Hosseini 71)

After the sexual attack, Hassan turns inward and emerges as an individual who lacks confidence. Prejudice based on ethnicity can also result in an unhealthy society, that promotes oppression, enslavement and genocide. A few weeks into assuming power, the Taliban banned kite fighting. "And two years later, in 1998, they massacred the Hazaras in Mazar-i-Sharif" (197). A strong figure in the novel, Assef represents the long-standing socio-political conflict in Afghanistan, especially between the Pashtuns and Hazaras. He serves as an example of the destructive effects of ethnic conflicts on people and communities through his words and deeds.

Assef is very keen to see the Hazaras exterminated from Afghanistan; and his actions towards the Hazaras seem to be motivated by some kind of violence. The

novel goes into more detail on Assef's radicalisation, which leads to his joining the Taliban, a group mostly comprising Pashtuns. Assef believes it is his responsibility as a member of the Taliban to slaughter the Hazaras in Afghanistan. His radical views on loyalty to the Taliban and ethnicity highlight how deeply embedded these ideas are in Afghanistan's social fabric. The fact that Assef calls Amir and Baba "a disgrace to Afghanistan" for their backing of Hazaras highlights how widespread ethnic discrimination is (Hosseini 33). His support for the Hazarajat massacre and his affiliation with the Taliban highlight the deadly effects of interethnic hostility, which result in violent crimes and carnage.

The Kite Runner highlights the significance of respecting all ethnic groups and the detrimental effects of prejudice on those affected, by exposing the enduring layers of ethnic orthodox ideas that have been passed down through the years. It critiques the dehumanising effects of ethnic prejudice in Afghan culture. The novel highlights the ingrained stereotypes and biases between Pashtuns and Hazaras, which result in a society where one group perceives itself as superior and the other as inferior. The characters Ali, Hassan and Sohrab, are marginalised and continually abused.

Though the work depicts racial conflicts in a depressing light, there are moments of optimism. A strong counterbalance is provided by the relationship between Hassan, a Hazara, and Amir, a Pashtun. The divisions that separate people based on race are broken by their mutual sacrifices — Hassan's early sacrifices for Amir and Amir's subsequent attempts to save Hassan's son, Sohrab. Amir's journey from bigotry to adopting a Hazara child and bringing Sohrab to America represents the possibility of change through understanding and empathy. The novel suggests that with educated viewpoints and joint efforts, a more accepting and compassionate

society, liberated from ethnic dehumanisation, can emerge. These incidents imply that Afghanistan can achieve unity and reconciliation despite its difficulties.

Although *The Kite Runner* portrays a grim picture of ethnic strife and societal struggle in Afghanistan, it also gives hope. Amir's and Hassan's bond challenges the notion that Pashtuns and Hazaras are incompatible by showing that sacrifice and harmony can cross societal boundaries. The intricate plot of the novel offers a promise for bridging ethnic divides and working toward a future in Afghanistan where there is greater unity.

An Analysis of Amir's Traumatic Experiences

Johansen holds that, literature possesses an unparalleled capacity to craft intricate fictional worlds that accurately mirror the realities of human existence. Over the years, literary works—even if they are exaggerated at times—have served as agonising mirrors that reveal the depths of human misery by reflecting the powerful influence of emotions (Johansen 187). It is noteworthy that literature rarely presents fundamental truths, opting instead to illustrate the complexities of suffering through a deftly orchestrated interplay of dramatic elements and falling actions. In Afghanistan's literary landscape, writers have mostly utilised cultural and historical resources to address themes of grief and suffering.

The Kite Runner delves into the many aspects of trauma, highlighting the protagonist Amir's battle with remorse, atonement and social trauma. Amir and Hassan, two boys with a common history, are the focus of the narrative. Guilt and treachery are deeply entwined with Amir's pain. The unsettling recollection of Amir seeing his friend Hassan raped by the vicious Assef opens the novel. Amir's guilt— at

not intervening to rescue Hassan or reporting the matter to the adults— follows him all through his life, influencing his choices and interactions with others.

Amir's words, "Standing in the kitchen with the receiver to my ear, I knew it wasn't just Rahim Khan on the line, it was my past of unatoned sin…", hint at the weight of guilt that Amir bears (Hosseini 10). Amir's horrific ordeal and remorse reverberates hauntingly throughout the story. Amir's life takes a significant turn when he witnesses Assef rape Hassan. This moment becomes the centre of Amir's universe, and he decides to save himself rather than intervene. This decision torments his conscience and shapes his personality for the rest of his life. Driven by desperation, Amir returns home after the event, and finds solace in his father's warmth. Amir recalls "I watched Hassan get raped, I said to no one" (86). Amir experiences dreams filled with vivid flashbacks of Hassan's attack and becomes restless. The experience leaves a lasting psychological mark on Amir and manifests as signs of avoidance, hyper vigilance and a persistent inner yearning for atonement. By shedding light on the psychological effects of Amir's inaction, Hosseini deftly conveys the essence of post-traumatic stress disorder (PTSD).

Recalling that he "barely saw Hassan for a week," Amir adds "…every time Hassan was around, I was getting a headache ...when he was around, the oxygen seeped out of the room... But even when he wasn't around, he was" (79-80, 88-89). After a while, Hassan makes an appearance again, but this time he seems hesitant to discuss what transpired since he has realised how powerless he is and how dumb it would be to focus only on his sadness. The story's disadvantaged communities, who are still viewed as the silent other, are reflected in Hassan's stillness. Both of the boys are unable to articulate the horror they have experienced. Even Amir, the adult,

testifying from the present, is unable to identify Hassan's assault as a rape. Rather, he consistently describes it as having "happened in the alley" (78).

Amir's PTSD-like symptoms are a result of his tragedy. His psychological struggle is characterised by nightmares, avoidance behaviours, hyper-vigilance, interrupted sleep and a distracted mind. Hosseini masterfully depicts Amir's inner struggle, demonstrating how horrific events may seep into the psyche and have a lasting impact on day-to-day functioning. Amir's contemplation of the evening when he experiences insomnia is a moving illustration of the long-lasting effects of trauma:

> I thought about Hassan's dream, the one about us swimming in the lake. There is no monster, he's said, just water. Except he'd been wrong about that. There was a monster in the lake. It had grabbed Hassan by the ankles, and dragged him to the murky bottom, I was that monster. (Hosseini 47)

Amir's experience is consistent with Lenore Terr's concept of psychic trauma. According to Terr, trauma happens when a person is suddenly hit with a powerful emotional impact. When Amir sees Hassan being raped, it instantly registers in his consciousness as an external painful experience. The event changes Amir's mentality and drastically modifies his relationship with Hassan, leaving an enduring effect. "Psychic trauma occurs when a sudden, unexpected, overwhelming intense emotional blow or a series of blows assaults the person from outside," explains Lenore Terr, a child psychiatrist who conducted the first extended study on traumatised youngsters (199). Traumatic events are exterior, but they internalise fast. Amir's horrific experience as an eyewitness to Hassan's rape alters their relationship irrevocably.

Amir and Hassan shared a close bond before the horrific incident, as

represented by their shared childhood exploits. But the trauma turns into a wedge that separates them. The internal tension brought on by guilt and humiliation is shown in Amir's severe mood swings, avoidance of Hassan and conscious actions to create a distance between himself and others. The story portrays the striking contrast in the interpersonal dynamics between Amir and Hassan, before and after the rape. Earlier "We [Amir and Hassan] took turns with the mirror as we ate mulberries, pelted each other with them, giggling, laughing" (Hosseini 3). The post-traumatic phase, characterised by betrayal and silence, is in sharp contrast to this blissful past.

Amir is still filled with regret and shame despite travelling to the United States. The story recounts his ascent to success, his marriage and his final return to Afghanistan under Taliban rule. His redemption becomes linked to the act of saving Hassan's son Sohrab from the clutches of Assef, who is currently a member of the Taliban. When Assef confronts Amir physically, it serves as a cathartic release "My body was broken… but I felt healed. Healed at last. I laughed" (289). This crucial point represents Amir's atonement and the resolution of his long-lasting trauma.

Rahim Khan's request that Amir go back to Afghanistan turns into a crucial exchange that reveals Hassan's history and introduces Amir to Sohrab, Hassan's son. The terrifying adventure of trying to get Sohrab back to safety ends with a violent confrontation with Assef, who is now a Taliban officer. Amir suffers serious injuries, but he also has a moment of redemption and makes peace with his past.

Unable to perform the role of a witness, Amir "turned away" and "stopped watching" as soon as he returned to the alley (72). Amir contemplates taking action to shield Hassan from Assef. But fear paralyses Amir. He flees the alley, leaving Hassan all alone to confront his attackers. Speaking from the present, a mature Amir cites

several reasons for his decision to part ways with Hassan. Fear and anxiety were at least the vocally expressed among them; however, the most pertinent reason was that Hassan was the "price" Amir had to pay for his father's love (Hosseini 73). For a moment at least, Amir mimics Hassan's assailants when he refers to his friend as "just a Hazara," implying that Hassan is merely a member of an ethnic minority and so his rape is just a collateral damage; an inevitable consequence of Hassan's ethnicity (73).

After Amir and Sohrab return to America, the story comes to an end, yet the wounds from the past still exist. The legacy of the events in Afghanistan on successive generations is reflected in Sohrab's trauma and silence. Amir tries to mend the scars. He finds a glimmer of hope in flying kites with Sohrab, which also brings back memories of Amir's youthful innocence.

Amir's reticence about his writing is particularly noticeable when it takes into account how significant storytelling is to him at the beginning of the novel. In the end, this is the closest Amir can get to expressing and bridging the gulf that trauma has created between his natural talent as a writer and his capacity to facilitate the witnessing of anything meaningful, be it personal or something important to the country.

But when he has finally dealt with his trauma in this way, Amir is better able to convey to Soraya the whole scope of it and is getting closer to the actualisation of his bildungsroman. After telling his partner "Everything," Amir feels "something lift" from his chest (298). The novel follows Soraya and Amir's decision to adopt Hassan's child, Sohrab, from Afghanistan. However, Sohrab's trauma and the difficulty entailed

in the process of adoption lead to Sohrab attempting to commit suicide. This highlights the long-term impact of trauma on marginalised voices.

Through Amir's journey, *The Kite Runner* deftly examines the complex nature of trauma. The novel goes beyond personal stories to reveal the anguish that Afghanistan has experienced as a nation. The greater socio-political background and Amir's quest for atonement emphasise the significant influence of past occurrences on individual stories. In the end, the novel implies that healing—while difficult—is achievable with bravery, compassion and a determination to put an end to the cycle of trauma. In addition to being a literary examination of trauma, Hosseini's novel is also a moving meditation on human fortitude and the pursuit of redemption in the face of extreme misfortune.

Amir does not like the fact Baba treats both Hassan and Amir in the same manner. He yearned for extra attention — "Baba would buy it for me but then he'd buy it for Hassan too" (Hosseini 48). Amir makes a concerted effort to meet his Baba's expectations. He pined for Baba's love with great desperation. He misses his father's tender love and care. Amir longs for Baba. He desires to spend time with his father, as any other young child would. "I remember all the times he didn't come home until after dark, all the times I ate dinner alone" (17).

The narrative also explores the complex ties that mould Amir. The development of Amir's character as well as the progress of the action in the novel are greatly influenced by Amir's early experiences, especially his relationships with family and friends. Growing up, Amir was with Hassan all the time. "When we were children, Hassan and I used to climb the poplar trees in the driveway of my father's

house and annoy our neighbours by reflecting sunlight into their homes with a shard of mirror" (3).

Amir's internal struggle stems primarily from the way his father Baba treats Hassan. Baba showers Hassan with affection and accords him equality despite his inferior social standing. This makes Amir jealous. Amir does not realise it yet, but Hassan is his half-brother. This complicates things even more. Amir detests the attention Baba gives Hassan and he yearns for a special place in his father's heart.

In spite of the socio-cultural divide and their master-servant relationship, Amir and Hassan share a close bond. Hassan is the only person who can understand Amir; he becomes a pillar of support for Amir since he understands Amir in a way that no others can. Because of their special link formed by their shared childhood traumas and dependence on one another, Hassan plays a crucial role in Amir's life. Amir believes Hassan is aware of all that goes through his head. This is implied in "Hassan couldn't read the first-grade text or novel but he'd read me plenty. That was a little unsettling, but it was also sort of comfortable to have someone who always knew what you needed" (Hosseini 58).

As discussed before, Amir's relationship with his father is steeped in insecurity. " I [Amir] always felt like Baba hated me a little. And why not? After all, I *had* killed his beloved wife, his beautiful princes, hadn't I?" (17). Amir's inner anguish and sacrifices during his early years are a result of his desire to gain his father's affection. He turns to kite-flying, a traditional pastime, as a means of finding comfort in the lack of parental affection. The complicated feelings that underlie Amir's jealousy and animosity toward Hassan stem from his desire for Baba's

undivided attention. Amir's psychological struggles and traditional Afghan beliefs collide, reflecting larger societal issues.

The story centres on Amir's transformational journey from infancy to adulthood, which is juxtaposed alongside historical occurrences such as the Soviet invasion, the flood of immigration to the United States and the rise of the Taliban. The core of the bildungsroman is Amir's complex personality, which is influenced by his early relationships. The narrative tackles atonement, remorse and historical repercussions, connecting the societal and the personal level. To put it briefly, Amir's emotional struggles and insecurities in *The Kite Runner* deftly combines historical details, familial dynamics and cultural elements to offer a moving meditation on the lasting value of childhood bonds.

The Kite Runner delves into themes of friendship, loyalty, regret, and redemption. The narrative centres on Hassan, who is sexually assaulted by Assef for not giving up his kite for Amir. This is representative of the Islamic custom of the sacrifice of the sheep or goat. This incident emphasises friendship and commitment by drawing a metaphorical connection between Hassan and the lamb sacrifice. When Hassan keeps the kite up for Amir, he suffers abuse; as he did when he first said he would "eat dirt" for Amir. (Hosseini 54) Hassan acts in the same ominous manner here.

Kites are an important symbol in this narrative. In the past, teams of boys competed in yearly kite tournaments in Afghanistan, where kites have been used as weapons in combat. The strength of the relationship between Hassan and Amir is represented by the kite. To beat the other competitors in the kite contest, they need to

function as a cohesive, well-oiled unit. Upon victory, Amir exclaims, "We won! We won!"(66). By referring to Hassan and himself as "we", Amir is formally acknowledging that they are a team. He thanks Hassan for being his friend. But the kite also ends up standing in for Amir's guilt. It is the cause of Hassan's rape. Hassan interprets the kite as a representation of their triumph in the competition. Amir interprets Hassan's return with the kite not as a sign of their victory but rather as a reminder of his guilt for not stepping in.

The kite reappears towards the end of the novel to further emphasise the themes of friendship and devotion. In the park, Amir and Hassan's son Sohrab are flying kites together. Amir promises Sohrab that he will run him a kite "a thousand times over" (Hosseini 2). When Hassan first shows Amir how devoted he is, he uses these words. It seems that Amir has come to realise how close he is to his former friend. The kite turns into a symbol that represents the tie between Amir and Hassan as well as between Sohrab and Amir.

When Amir's neighbourhood hosts a kite tournament in the winter of 1975, Baba jokingly suggests that Amir might win. This gives Amir a strong urge to succeed to seek Baba's approval. Amir does well in the competition and ends up being the only competitor with a blue kite. Amir wins the struggle and prevails. He notices Baba observing him from a rooftop at this very moment. Hassan leaves to get the kite, promising to bring it back for Amir. After accepting everyone's congratulations, Amir asks around to see whether anyone has seen Hassan. After some time, Amir discovers Hassan in an alleyway where two other boys and Assef are confronting him. Hassan declines Assef's demand for the kite, claiming that he handled it properly and that

Amir is the rightful owner. Amir witnesses this altercation but decides to remain silent instead of taking action.

Since they were babies and shared the same breast, Amir recalls their special closeness. He talks about how Hassan's fortune was judged to be better than his own during a visit to a fortune teller. These recollections show how close they used to be. But instead of intervening when he witnesses Assef and other people pinning Hassan to the ground and getting ready to hurt him, Amir chooses to flee. Amir sees Hassan fifteen minutes later, in tears and with blood on his face. After giving Amir the kite, the two boys decide not to talk about what had transpired. When they get home, Baba hugs Amir. Feeling the weight of his remorse, Amir sobs and buries his face against his father's chest.

Because he fears Assef and believes that if he steps in or attempts to stop Assef from hurting Hassan, he will be bullied and hurt instead, Amir is frightened to take action in this circumstance. As a result, Amir develops sleeplessness. He was unable to look Hassan in the eye and refuses to go to sleep. At night, all he could think about was what had occurred, and all he could see of it was Hassan's face. Amir embodies this when he says "He moved his head slightly and I caught a glimpse of his face" (Hosseini 76).

Hassan is left by Amir in the alleyway. This counts as one of Amir's two big betrayals of Hassan; the second is when Amir hides his watch and a wad of cash under Hassan's mattress. Amir never informs Hassan that he witnessed what happened in the alley, maybe out of guilt. Instead of rebelling against Amir as he had expected, Hassan continues to be submissive by cleaning, cooking and doing laundry.

After the attack, Amir's communication with Hassan comes to an abrupt halt. He is overcome with guilt for not standing up to Assef while he was being bullied, and he wishes Hassan would just vanish from his life so he could stop thinking about it. Amir and Hassan's friendship terminate suddenly. "I lifted Hassan's mattress and planted my new watch and a handful of Afghani bills under it" (Hosseini 104). Amir claims that Hassan had hidden his birthday gift—a watch and cash—under his mattress to steal it. It therefore appears that, rather than being the product of fate, Amir's tragedy is a result of his own choices. His lack of bravery and self-interest lead him to choose to flee the scene while watching Hassan being sexually assaulted, instead of confronting the situation and defending Hassan. He is not any happier as a result, and he is subsequently moved by his guilt to find a means of atonement.

To deter Amir from lying further, Ali decides to leave the house with Hassan. This makes Ali the target of Amir's rage. Amir's and Hassan's long-term friendship comes to an abrupt end when Hassan and his father Ali leave. This regretful experience inspires Amir to ask for pardon for his previous wrongdoings. Amir's atonement efforts, interpersonal relationships and regret are all explored in the story, which both highlight and caution against the negative effects of treachery.

The novel's climax is when Amir gets severely beaten by Assef while trying to save Sohrab. This instance represents the tangible result of Amir's refusal to accept a pounding for Hassan decades earlier. Amir's internal conflict is finally resolved during this intense struggle, as evidenced by his uncontrollable loud laughter throughout, which represents a sense of final healing. Even though this atoning battle is the culmination, Amir's betrayal will not be fully resolved until he moves to bring Hassan's son Sohrab to the United States. When Amir chases after a kite at the end of the novel, it seems as though the future of characters would be bright and happy.

The pivotal events of Hassan's suffering and Amir's betrayal in *The Kite Runner* determine the fates of the characters and move the story towards themes of forgiveness and redemption. The novel offers an in-depth examination of the long-lasting effects of one's deeds and the possibility of personal development through repentance and reconciliation.

Hosseini's Narrative Style in Conveying Trauma

The narrative deftly blends the past and present, evoking nostalgia and piecing together memories through flashbacks, emphasising the significance of early life experiences in determining how people react to traumatic situations. Hosseini's story examines loss while placing the author in the context of an Afghan immigrant living in the West. Hosseini's narrative disclaimers draw attention to the limits of his representation, namely the anguish and suffering experienced by children following emigration. Amir reflects on his past and the effects of his choices—especially his incapacity to support Hassan—while sharing a moving narrative. The narrative also examines the challenges of raising children after a war, emphasising how wartime trauma transforms families and lives.

The Kite Runner examines the psychological effects of trauma through the first-person point of view. Amir, the main character and narrator, uses storytelling as a coping technique as he deals with the long-term effects of a tragic event. The story takes place against the turbulent backdrop of Afghanistan's past, which includes the Taliban insurgency and the occupation by the Russian Union. Hosseini depicts how the lives of people are destroyed by fusing personal and socio-historical events. The story recounts the terrible outcomes for Hassan and his family as well as the losses

that Amir go through, such as the death of his father's and that of his father's closest friend, Rahim Khan.

David Jefferess's research explores the book as an ethnography, coming-of-age story and morality tale, focusing on Amir's use of storytelling to alleviate his traumatic experiences. He views Amir's speech as an allegory of global ethics, reflecting current theories of cosmopolitan ethics. Jefferess's perspective emphasises the novel's contribution to contemporary cosmopolitan theories of ethics. Jefferess claims that the text's "apparent humanising function reflects current theories of cosmopolitan ethics" (390). He interprets Amir's speech "as an allegory of global ethics" (390).

Hosseini's first-person narrative *The Kite Runner* tells the story of Amir's search for forgiveness and atonement for past transgressions. The narrative arouses intense emotions with genuine descriptions and vivid wording. Through writing, Amir addresses his dark background; writing in a way has been therapeutic for Amir for nearly three decades. His writings, introspection and inner monologue act as barriers against the residue of the past, culminating in a journey to Kabul that transforms his life.

In addition to addressing the past, Amir uses his writing as a tool to lessen the mental load that the unsettling memories impose. According to Harold Bloom who describes the story as a "grindingly sincere narrative in the shape of a memoir," the first-person perspective adds more emotional power to the narrative (Bloom, *Bloom's Guides: The Kite-Runner* 7). Readers are greatly moved by Amir's earnestness and his quest for atonement, which helps them develop an empathic grasp of the difficulties associated with remorse, forgiveness and the long-lasting effects of previous deeds.

The first-person story delves into Amir's emotional journey and the consequences of his prior encounters. The story not only brings past events back to life but also transforms his current perspective by fusing pain with knowledge. As a result, the subject of the narrative, Amir, "is at once a product and agent of history; the site of experience, memory, storytelling, and aesthetic judgment; an agent of knowing as much as of action" (Biehl et al 14).

The emotional effect of *The Kite Runner* is greatly enhanced by Amir's use of first-person storytelling. David Herman claims that Amir's narration is essential to the efforts of the characters to make sense of the world, themselves, and each other. According to David Herman, narrative is a type of representation that is especially well-suited to encapsulate the emotional core of lived experiences. In addition, Amir's storytelling "contributes primordially to the sense-making activities," which help him and the other characters "make sense of themselves, one another, and the world" (Herman 54). Herman views the story as a "mode of representation tailor-made for gauging the felt quality of lived experiences" (138).

The Kite Runner uses Amir's past experiences to narrate his thoughts and discourse, providing a glimpse into the emotional landscape of the story. The emotional resonance of the events mirror real-life experiences, enhancing emotional involvement. The novel explores a universal frame, the envy and destructive consequences of early adolescence, which reverberates universally in human society. Amir's first-person narrative serves as a conduit to understanding the characters and their world, as well as emotionally engaging with the universal aspects of the human experience portrayed in the novel.

Amir atones for his disturbing crime by sharing, through his narration, his issues with mental and physical health. Through the first-person narrative, Amir shares his physical and emotional problems to come to terms with a previous action that haunts him. His evocative storytelling allows him to explore the underlying jealousy of his obsessive teenage years, which is the source of his struggle with Hassan. His narrating of "I" from an ironic point of view illuminates the problem's deterministic causes. "I never thought of Hassan and me as friends either," Amir's observation is paired with an awareness of contextual obstacles (Hosseini 25). He emphasises the lasting influence of both religion and history, pointing out the profound differences between Pashtun and Hazara, Sunni and Shi'a, and exposes a harsh reality that goes beyond sentimentality. The first-person narrative of this reflective trip gives Amir's search for atonement and self-understanding more emotional depth, "In the end, I was a Pashtun and he was a Hazara, I was Sunni and he was Shi'a" (25).

Amir confesses that the major reason he hated Hassan was that he shared his father's attentions, and Amir "wished he'd[Hassan] let me be the favourite" (51). Furthermore, Amir's narrative demonstrates his desire to get rid of Hassan. He grows increasingly hostile towards Hassan as he discovers more about Hassan's abilities. He was angry, for instance, because Hassan could read his mind. "How could I be such an open book to him when, half the time, I had no idea what was milling around in his head?", he asks (60-61). Because Hassan had a major role in Amir's teenage experiences, he is the main focus of his narrative. Amir thinks of Hassan, when he sees his wife's face through the veil on the day of their wedding "I remember wondering if Hassan too had married. And so, whose face he had seen in the mirror under the veil? Whose henna-painted hands had he held?" (171).

Amir, driven by guilt, travels to Afghanistan to save Hassan's son, Sohrab, as a means of atoning for past transgressions. His relentless pursuit of redemption leads him to encounter tragic events in Kabul. Rahim Khan's call, seen as a symbolic summon from his past, is interpreted as a call to confront his "past of unatoned sins" (Hosseini 1). Taking Sohrab to America becomes Amir's aspiration for redemption, a way to escape the haunting shadows of his past. The first-person narrative effectively captures the emotional turmoil and internal conflict as Amir grapples with the consequences of his actions. The call serves as a catalyst, propelling Amir into a journey of self-discovery, forgiveness and the pursuit of atonement.

Through deft use of language, *The Kite Runner* evokes painful emotions through vivid images and potent descriptions. Khaled Hosseini employs a vivid narrative and evocative language in the novel. The experiences of the characters—including the rape of Hassan—are central to the narrative. The expressive language highlights the psychological ramifications of pain and guilt, while the vivid details inspire horror, helplessness and anguish. To foster compassion and understanding, the novel also examines the collective agony of the Afghan people.

According to narratologists like David Herman and Monika Fludernik, the representation of experience is crucial to the narrative. In *The Kite Runner* Hosseini depicts the socio-historical events behind the troubles in Afghanistan and Amir's universal experiences through multiple storytelling approaches. Because they may transport readers to fantastical settings and arouse powerful emotions, Fludernik thinks that real-life experience frames are the most important component of the narrativity of a narrative. She refers to this paradigm as "the quasi-mimetic evocation

of real-life experience," or "experientiality," (Fludernik 9). Herman views storytelling as a "mode of representation specifically designed to assess the felt quality of lived experiences" at the same time (138).

The inner anguish and emotional hardships of the protagonist are accurately depicted through the first-person narrative perspective. The reflective style makes Amir's mental conflict and moral quandaries clearer. His attempts to embrace his previous acts as well as his sentiments of remorse, humiliation and guilt are made easier to understand by the use of introspective language. This linguistic portrayal of the internal struggle successfully awakens the emotions by arousing sentiments of guilt, self-doubt and existential uneasiness.

The Kite Runner explores the complex and profound impact that language has in eliciting terrible emotions. The work successfully conveys the level of psychological anguish endured by the protagonists and evokes a strong emotional response from using vivid, introspective, and culturally relevant language.

The Interplay of Memory, Guilt and Redemption

The Kite Runner examines how memory interacts: it ties together memories of nostalgia, regret and childhood. It turns into a powerful meditation on the lingering effects of past choices and the complex feelings that surround the interaction between memory and the present. Amir's move to America at the age of eighteen is a watershed moment in which childhood memories re-emerge. A phone call from Rahim Khan in Pakistan sparks a flood of memories, demonstrating the lasting power of memory. "He asked me to come to see him…The early-afternoon sun sparkled on the water where dozens of miniature boats sailed, propelled by a crisp breeze" (Hosseini 1).

The narrative draws attention to the intricacies of generational memory, hidden truths, familial bonds and the long-term effects of certain decisions. Hosseini's personal experiences and the novel's emphasis on parenting and childhood memories create a close author-narrative link. The novel weaves together the emotional, as well as elements of childhood friendship through flashbacks and the backdrop of the Afghanistan War deepens the sense of self of the characters.

The Kite Runner is a testament to the interplay of memory in shaping the fates of the characters. Childhood, friendship and nostalgia are intertwined with war tragedy, providing a moving study of guilt and redemption. The novel examines how guilt affects Baba, Amir and Sanubar, emphasising how regret can change a person's character and destroy relationships. Sanubar's return, motivated by a want for pardon, shows how permanent shame is. The narrative emphasises how important it is for individuals who have committed transgressions to ask for forgiveness. Amir's flight from his past to the United States is symbolised by his voyage from Afghanistan, while a phone call from Rahim Khan in Pakistan sets off a cascade of recollections and self-deprecating thoughts.

The interplay of redemption is a central concern of the novel, as Amir's sense of guilt is intrinsically linked to his redemption. *The Kite Runner* tackles the persistent ramifications of previous deeds, the disruptions produced by war and the redemption sought through personal journey of Amir. Without this burden of shame, Amir would not feel the need to combat unfairness and injustice, which ultimately shows itself in his dedication to supporting Sohrab, a symbol of the less fortunate.

The distinct social classes and ethnic backgrounds of the characters reflect the

divisions in society that impact an individual's destiny. The author urges the privileged class to own up to their past transgressions and actively participate in the nation's healing process, as Amir's salvation serves as a spur to address systemic problems that afflict Afghan society.

The novel delves into the intricacies of Amir's trauma and the significance of trauma within the storyline. Cathy Caruth, views trauma as "the wound of the mind – the breach in the mind's experience of time, self, and the world …it imposes itself again, repeatedly, in the nightmares and repetitive actions of the survivor." (Caruth, *Unclaimed Experience* 3-4).

It is evident from the outset of the novel that Amir is still plagued by the memories of that horrific experience. Over the past twenty six years, he has been "peeping through" (Hosseini 131). This novel delves into the idea of trauma, how it recurs and how it affects Amir, the main character. The novel suggests that trauma can cause a person to relive the event through hallucinations, flashbacks and nightmares. Rahim Khan, Baba's friend, calls Amir in the opening chapter and begs of him to turn good once more.

The prolonged suffering and unbearable discomfort experienced by survivors of trauma result in a frantic attempt to block out memories or develop resistance to them. Amir encounters the same thing. He avoids any interactions with Hassan, who serves as a trigger for his painful recollections, in an attempt to cope with his trauma after that day in the alley. He does not forget it at all; even if he and his father go to his uncle Homayoun's place. There all except Amir were having a great time:

> I closed my eyes, turned my face to the sun. Little shapes formed behind my eyelids, merged, formed a single image: Hassan's brown corduroy pants discarded on a pile of old bricks in the alley. (Hosseini 84)

When Amir comes back to seek atonement after 26 years, he finds that Hassan is his half-brother. By acknowledging that he was aware of Hassan's kite flying incident, Rahim Khan provides Amir with a way to atone and lessens his sense of guilt. He requests that Amir free Hassan's son Sohrab from an orphanage in Kabul. But Amir learns that Assef who is now a Taliban commander forcefully seizes Sohrab from the orphanage and subjects him to sexual abuse. When Amir goes to Assef's place to rescue Sohrab, he is brutally beaten, but Sohrab uses a slingshot to fire a brass ball directly into Assef's eye. Amir and Sohrab manage to escape. Amir needs to face his history and accept responsibility for his mistakes. He begs of Sohrab to move with him to the US.

As he defends Sohrab, Amir's anguish lessens and his guilt decreases. He finds comfort in confiding his memories to an understanding listener and ultimately, he calls his wife Soraya and tells her everything. He heals from his trauma through this procedure: "I had pictured this moment so many times, dreaded it, but as I spoke, I felt something lifting of my chest" (Hosseini 325).

Amir is told by the traumatised youngster Sohrab that he does not want to visit an orphanage ever again. Neither is Sohrab inclined to go to the Shah Faisal Mosque. Sohrab says "I miss my father and mother too...but sometimes I am glad they are not...they are not here anymore...because I don't want them to see me...I am so dirty...I am so dirty and full of sin" (319).

Even after he moves to California, Sohrab does not talk much and seems withdrawn. As stated by Amir, the narrator: “Sohrab’s silence wasn’t the self-imposed silence of those with convictions” (Hosseini 361). However, things with Sohrab get better as the novel comes to a close. Amir is seen sprinting behind a kite for Hassan’s son, “with the wind blowing in my face, and a smile as wise as the valley of Panjsher on my lips” (371). While Sohrab finds it difficult to attain mental peace, Amir learns to accept and make peace with his history.

Amir chooses to break free from his cycle of pain and come to terms with his past misdeeds. Though Amir is conscious of the repercussions of his conduct, he is reluctant to risk the chance of losing everything in the US. His deep-seated remorse towards his buddy Hassan, whom he sacrifices to get Baba's favour, are highlighted in the narrative. “I was afraid of Assef and what he would do to me…The answer floated to my conscious mind before I could thwart it: He was just a Hazara, wasn’t he?" (77). The religious idea of offering a lamb as a sacrifice to please God alludes to Ibrahim's attempted sacrifice of Ishmael and highlights the necessity of going through hardships and addressing one's inner demons to find inner peace and freedom from guilt.

Amir confesses his wrongdoings and stands up for Sohrab and himself. Amir feels liberated when he stands up for Sohrab as well when Assef violently beats him up. He narrates “My body was broken—just how badly I wouldn’t find out until later—but I felt healed. Healed at last. I laughed… I was on the ground laughing” (289).Amir can put his difficult history behind him and embrace his newfound freedom.

Amir, who was physically harmed by Assef, is freed from the emotional pain he had for not intervening when Hassan was being raped in the alley. Assef's victory over him lets him revisit the past and feel vindicated. By showing compassion, taking care of others and facing his cruelty, he breaks free from his guilt and embarks on a road to redemption.

The Kite Runner examines redemption through Amir's voyage of self-discovery and a bloody struggle for atonement with Assef. Amir feels less guilty. The narrative emphasises the resilience of the human spirit and the ability of acceptance to lead to change. The protagonist exhibits courage, acceptance and compassion in his path to atonement.

The novel provides a powerful depiction of childhood tragedy linked with Afghanistan's turbulent political scene. The story delves deeply into the depths of emotional and political tragedy, shedding light on the significance of historical events on human lives. Amir's path from a guilt-ridden childhood to seeking penance as an adult exemplifies the complex interaction of human decisions and broader cultural factors. His bond with Hassan, distinguished by loyalty and betrayal, provides an emotional background to Afghanistan's political upheaval. The anguish inflicted on Hassan and Amir reverberates throughout the story, emphasising the lingering effects of childhood events.

Hosseini's narrative style expertly depicts the complexities of pain, combining vivid imagery, emotional depth and cultural authenticity. By digging into the depths of memory, remorse and forgiveness, the story challenges readers to confront the intricacies of trauma and its consequences. *The Kite Runner* delves deeply into the

human ability for perseverance and atonement in the face of hardship through Amir's path of self-discovery and reconciliation.

In analysing *The Kite Runner,* one obtains vital insights into the role of literature in facing and probing traumatic events. Hosseini's account exemplifies the ability of storytelling to highlight the darkest parts of human life while also offering hope in the face of sorrow. By delving into the complexity of human and political pain, *The Kite Runner* transcends its place as a work of fiction and becomes a deep meditation on the long-term impact of trauma and the possibility of recovery.

Moving forward, it is critical to continue investigating the interconnections of personal and political trauma in literature, utilising varied cultural viewpoints and storytelling styles. By encouraging multidisciplinary conversation and accepting diverse approaches to trauma studies, one may obtain a better understanding of the human experience and strive towards a more compassionate and empathic society.

Chapter 3

Atonement: Intersection of Guilt and Traumatic Memory

Guilt is a complex emotional and cognitive phenomenon that stems from an individual's ability for moral self-evaluation. Guilt fundamentally arises from the perception of violating one's own internal moral principles, societal expectations or the requirements set by the governing authority. The sense of moral failing can manifest itself in multiple ways; it may present itself as guilt complex. Guilt complex may not be a proportional response to a wrongdoing, rather it is a pervasive psychological state marked by self-reproach and self-blame.

Ian McEwan's novel *Atonement* explores the complex feelings and repercussions associated with guilt. The novel, set in 20th century England, delves into the complexity of the human psyche, including the effects of childhood imagination, childhood trauma and the weight of regret. The plot of *Atonement* revolves around Briony Tallis, a little girl with a strong imagination and a talent for storytelling. Her misperception of a harmless interaction between her sister, Cecilia and Robbie Turner, the son of the family's charwoman, triggers a series of events that results in their lives being changed forever. The narrative begins with 13-year-old Briony Tallis, an aspiring writer, witnessing a sexual encounter between her sister Cecilia and Robbie; Briony misinterprets it to be an act of rape. Later that evening, Briony's cousin Lola is sexually assaulted and Briony falsely accuses Robbie of the crime, despite her uncertainty about the identity of the actual perpetrator. Robbie is arrested and incarcerated, while Cecilia cuts ties with her family due to their role in Robbie's conviction. The narrative then shifts to Robbie's experiences during the Second

World War, as he is released from prison to join the army. He and Cecilia reunite briefly before Robbie is sent to France, where he witnesses the horrors of war. Meanwhile, Briony becomes a nurse, partly as an act of penance for her false accusation. She later learns that Lola is set to marry Paul Marshall, the actual rapist. In the novel's epilogue, set in 1999, it is revealed that the preceding narrative is a novel written by an elderly Briony, who is dying of dementia. She has spent her life attempting to atone for the consequences of her childhood mistake and her novel serves as a final effort to make amends.

This chapter explores McEwan's complex narrative of guilt, innocence and trauma. It investigates the correlation of youthful innocence and adulthood and looks at how this link blurs the boundaries between imagination and reality. It also explores the thematic depth of *Atonement* and focuses on McEwan's storytelling strategies and how he handles guilt, childhood fantasy and trauma.

Contextual Background: England in the 20th Century

Significant socio-cultural changes took place in England in the 20th century. England remained a prominent world power. It possessed a large empire that stretched over numerous continents and was at the vanguard of the League of Nations, an international organisation established after the First World War to maintain world peace. Yet, there was considerable tension in the country. Adolf Hitler's strong expansionist plans resulted in the armament of Germany, which frightened several in England, especially Winston Churchill, who cautioned about the dangers of appeasement.

> The boys stared at him as they absorbed this and could not speak, for they knew that the business of newspapers was momentous:

> earthquakes and train crashes, what the government and nations did from day to day, and whether more money should be spent on guns in case Hitler attacked England. (McEwan 42)

The nation's collective mentality was forever clouded in the aftermath of the First World War. An unparalleled amount of violence and loss occurred during the war and its wounds permeated into society and left a lasting impression on both individual and societal awareness. Understanding how trauma, both overt and covert, gets entwined with the lives of the individuals depends on this post-war environment. Although the younger generation in the story does not directly experience the agony of war, it provides a backdrop against which their particular traumas are revealed.

The novel's depiction of the impending threat of World War II in the latter half adds another element to the way trauma is shaped. The protagonists deal with the uncertainty of living in a world on the verge of a worldwide war, and the fear of an oncoming disaster permeates every aspect of their existence. The elevated emotional states of the characters are influenced by this omnipresent sense of dread, which also has an impact on the course of their relationships and the severity of their traumas.

> Six decades later she would describe how at the age of thirteen she had written her way through a whole history of literature…to arrive at an impartial psychological realism which she had discovered for herself, one special morning during a heat wave in 1935. (30)

With the prospect of World War II looming, Briony's literary development becomes even more important. The threat of international conflict looms large over the lives of the main characters and their existence is marked by a palpable sense of

fear. The ongoing climate of uncertainty, rendered the daily interactions of the characters evenmore emotionally intense.Briony's protagonists must navigate the intricacies of a society that is on the verge of disaster while at the same time address both the external dangers and the internal agony caused by their own decisions and views. Briony's narrative skills are evident as she skilfully conveys the profound psychological effects of societal change, highlighting the vulnerability of human bonds in the face of imminent calamity.

While analysing the novel, it is evident that the hierarchical nature of 20th century English society is a driving force in bringing about trauma. The characters perceive and assimilate guilt through the prisms of class differences and societal expectations. The inflexible framework of English society of the 20th century adds to the complexity of the experiences of the individuals by raising the stakes for their deeds and the ensuing guilt they must face. Robbie gets conscripted as a soldier in the Second World War, four years after he is accused by Briony and thrown into jail. Although she is already in charge of keeping Cecilia and Robbie apart, Briony loses control of the situation when she considers the possibility that Robbie will die in the conflict: "Her secret torment and the public upheaval of war had always seemed separate worlds, but now she understood how the war might compound her crime" (McEwan 288). Indeed, it does. Four months after Cecilia's death by explosion, Robbie passes away from septicemia while serving in France. Briony feels powerless in the face of the battle, and it intensifies her resentment from childhood.

The formation of trauma is also influenced by gender relations. As a result of the extra demands imposed on them by their gender roles, people's reactions to traumatic experiences are affected. The cultural norms of a certain era not only shape

how individuals experience trauma, but also influence how it is expressed and resolved, thereby additional levels of complexity to the personal journey of the characters.Essentially, the characters wrestle with trauma, shame and the complex childhood imagination. The views of the characters and their emotional landscapes are shaped by the historical and cultural context of 20th century England. The encounters of the protagonists are also significantly shaped by class divisions, which are ingrained in English culture at this time. Living on a large estate, the Tallis family represents the elite class of society, whilst the Turner family is an employee class.

The course of relationships and exchanges is determined by societal conventions, which complicates the feelings of guilt of the individuals. There is a complex interplay between societal effects and individual agency as a result of the limits imposed by societal expectations. The constant backdrop of the societal gaze is used to assess guilt and gauge youthful innocence.

The characters in *Atonement* are by-products of their cultural surroundings. Early 20th-century English customs and expectations form a complex web that affects the characters' views of themselves and other people, which in turn shapes the type of guilt they experience. Childhood innocence becomes a delicate concept in the maze of social expectations, readily upended by the ubiquitous impact of cultural standards. This investigation provides useful context to understand the complex relationship between personal experiences and cultural norms in *Atonement*. It helps to unravel the complexities of guilt and childhood fantasy.

The Second World War had a profound and long-lasting effect on British society. Significant alterations were brought about by the conflict in several spheres

of life, including the government, economics and the social structure of the nation. The disparity between the personalities is reflected in the aftermath of the Second World War. The novel is concerned with "the relation between individual agency and larger forces of history," and character development is set against a vast political and historical backdrop (Van Dijkhuizen 152). The only way Robbie can get out of jail is if he joins the army and fights in the war. To emphasise how terrible the war is for Robbie, the novel focuses on a single historical event—the evacuation and withdrawal from Dunkirk. The horrific circumstances of the World War are used to underline Robbie's downfall: "There were horrors enough, but it was the unexpected detail that threw him and afterward would not let him go" (McEwan 191). Robbie's worn-out, helpless assessment of the horrifying fallout from a blast illustrates the horrible backdrop of the conflict:

> The leg was twenty feet up, wedged in the first forking of the trunk, bare, severed cleanly above the knee. From where they stood there was no sign of blood or torn flesh. It was a perfect leg, pale, smooth, small enough to be a child's. The way it was angled in the fork, it seemed to be on display, for their benefit or enlightenment: this is a leg (192).

Disparities in socio-economic status are deeply entrenched in Briony's consciousness. This idea is exemplified with a clear example. One day, Briony observes Cecilia and Robbie meeting in front of the Triton fountain. The two unintentionally break a family heirloom—a vase. Briony perceives the event incorrectly, believing Robbie to be pressuring her sister to jump into the lake after undressing. Briony's interpretation of the encounter between Robbie and Cecilia at the

fountain, “sets in motion a series of wrong and hateful accusations that will have lasting repercussions for everyone” (Kogan 52). Not only does this scenario set the stage for future events, but it also demonstrates how Briony perceives events according to her prejudices against certain classes.

> Robbie Turner, only son of a humble cleaning lady and of no known father, Robbie who has been subsidised through school and university, had wanted to be a landscape gardener, and now wanted to take up medicine, had the boldness of ambition to ask for Cecilia’s hand. (McEwan 38)

The final line, which reads, “had the boldness of ambition to ask for Cecilia’s hand” emphasises Briony’s class bias. Class distinctions are stressed once more when the same incident is recounted from what appears to be Cecilia’s story and narrated from her perspective “She[Celia] was being mocked, or she was being punished – she did not know which was worse. Punished for being in a different circle at Cambridge, for not having a charlady for a mother” (27).

Not only does Cecilia’s intense emotional state indicate that she is concealing her romantic affection for Robbie, but it also highlights the significance of social status. Here, the term “a different circle at Cambridge” highlights the pervasive class disparities by acting as a metonymic synonym. The statement emphasises how Robbie and Cecilia are from different socio-economic classes. Expectations about social class are prominent in this scenario, illustrating the fundamental inequity between the various societal strata.

Cecilia belongs to the upper middle class and is supported by her family's wealth and status, but she also feels trapped by her family's low expectations of

women's roles in society, which stem from her upbringing—marrying affluent people and start a family (Fraser 471). Cecilia is bound by familial and societal expectations. She "wondered, as she sometimes did when she met a man for the first time, if this was the one, she was going to marry" notwithstanding her romantic impulses for Robbie when she first encounters Paul (McEwan 47). This statement conveys a strong sense of mortality, as though Cecilia has no control over her destiny or who she will marry. Cecilia muses while Paul takes "control of the conversation with a ten-minute monologue," which heightens her sense of approaching doom (49).

> Watching him during the first several minutes of his delivery, Cecilia felt a pleasant sinking sensation in her stomach as she contemplated how deliciously self-destructive it would be, almost erotic, to be married to a man so nearly handsome, so hugely rich, so unfathomably stupid (50).

The way this passage is written invokes sentiments of death, but it also blends an erotic intimation with feelings of self-destruction, emphasising how deeply ingrained Cecilia's membership in society is. But as the story goes on, Cecilia gains "a growing class experience into class consciousness" as a result of her love for Robbie and her increasing realisation of "the expendability of people from lower-class backgrounds to those above them" (Fraser 471).Paul benefits from the class structure, but Robbie falls prey to stereotypes based on class.Paul, who may be the culprit, escapes punishment because of his wealth and social standing. In addition, he prospers as a result of World War II. Robbie, on the other hand, has to serve out his sentence in prison and later join the military and take part in combat. But in addition to having their lives controlled by outside forces, all of the characters—aside from Paul—are also subject

to the limitations imposed by the class system. Robbie, Cecilia and Briony—the three central characters—are all victims of their socio-economic backgrounds. Class bias of society towards the working class is the main cause of Robbie's downfall, despite his strong social skills, excellent education and willingness to grow as a person. Cecilia

> is deeply imbued with the identities relating to an upper-middle-class background, but what happens to Robbie, and the class prejudice of her family that allows him to become victimised in this way, begins to fragment her class identity and make her more class conscious of those below her in the class system (Fraser 466).

Cecilia demonstrates the capacity to transcend her upbringing and the associated assumptions. She is strong and courageous, yet she is unable to save Robbie. Paul, the anti-protagonist, is the only character in the story who benefits from his riches and position. He is the archetype of the wealthy businessman who rises through society's ranks thanks to his phenomenal success with the Amo Bar, a chocolate bar that represents capitalist exploitation. Even then, Paul feels compelled to meet the expectations of the upper class and goes on to become a prominent donor.

A sense of doubt and gloom permeates the lives of the protagonists as the spectre of World War II looms large. The events that transpire cast a shadow on the personal difficulties of the individuals, making the consequences of their acts more significant and the complexity of their guilt more profound. The approaching conflict turns into a symbolic canvas on which the characters draw their stories of atonement and salvation. They view life, love and the need for forgiveness through the lens of an impending apocalyptic catastrophe, which creates a tapestry of guilt that is deeply

linked with the historical forces at work. The way society reacts to these historical occurrences also significantly influences the lives of the protagonists. The battle permanently alters society's norms and expectations by leaving its stamp on the human mind. As the individuals negotiate the changing patterns of society's ideals and the expectations shaped by the war, their difficulties with guilt are exacerbated. The main characters are entangled in a complex interplay between their duty and the broader historical influences that have moulded their lives.

Atonement explores how guilt changes the characters' perspectives of themselves and of others. Briony's false charge against Robbie has far-reaching consequences, exposing the fragility of truth and the ability of storytelling to warp reality. Furthermore, the novel investigates the psychological effects of guilt on the accuser as well as the psychological effect of suffering on the accused. Robbie, who is falsely accused of rape, faces the ramifications of Briony's actions. He not only has to serve a prison sentence, but also has to navigate the horrors of war. Briony experiences guilt and seeks forgiveness, which changes the trajectory of her life. Through Briony's path of self-discovery and atonement, the novel explores the lasting impact of childhood trauma and the need for absolution.

Childhood Imaginations and the Construction of Guilt

Briony attempts to atone for her transgressions by providing Robbie and Cecilia with an enjoyable conclusion in her fiction. The title of the novel alludes to Briony's effort at atonement through her narrative. The work also poses the question of whether the writer or even God can provide a satisfactory atonement. Through her voyage, Briony exposes both her artistic and imaginative side in addition to her reflective views regarding her previous actions and trauma. By focusing on little

Briony's imaginative creativity, the reader may trace her development as a storyteller from traditional tales to melodrama and modernism to realistic literature (Hidalgo 85).

In her initial attempt to understand how minds of other people work, Briony ignores her judgment of what is happening in favour of her imagined constructions about other people. Ensnared in "the connection among her writer imagination and perspectival error" she misinterprets the letter Robbie requests that she carry, the conversation that transpires among Cecilia and Robbie at the fountain as well as the library and lastly, the individual that she witnesses torturing Lola (Worthington 156). When Briony sees her sister's attachment to Robbie, first by the fountain on the family's country estate grounds and then in the library, her innocent childhood is shattered, as seen in the dream.

> She [Cecilia] stepped out into the hallway, determined to face down his insolence, or his mockery, and was confronted instead by her sister, clearly in distress. Her eyelids were swollen and pink, and she was pinching on her lower lip with forefinger and thumb, an old sign with Briony that some serious weeping was to be done. (McEwan 11)

Briony mistakenly believes that Robbie is approaching Cecilia with sexual motives. Here, she loses confidence in herself and her reliance on adults and she feels frustrated with the world of adults. She reads the letters Robbie sends Cecilia, which intensifies this trauma. While McEwan argues that there should be a balance between entering and leaving a story, *Atonement* focuses on stories that are difficult to quit. At the core of this idea is the scenario that Briony creates, instead of formally recording it, which leads her to accuse Robbie of raping her cousin Lola. To force "the patterns

of fiction on the facts of life," Briony combines the experiences of the creative with the mundane (Albers and Caeners 714).

At the age of eighteen, Briony admits that her feelings of guilt of her crime have intensified and that it is time to deal with her regret. This is her first step on the path to atonement. While attempting to regain her self-respect, Briony experiences a crisis of confidence, which questions her capacity to behave in a morally and ethically responsible manner. She is so reliant on the opinions of others that very often lead to her embarrassment and self-depreciation. She is very close to self-loathing, has a strong desire to please and denies herself independent opinions. Her method of receiving validation and being accepted in the new community, through rules and strictness, helps her to control her inner, erratic feelings of guilt. Robbie was accused of rape by Briony, but it appears from her remarks about Marshall that she is aware that he is the real offender. The criminals who coexist with one another maintain their secrets, which eventually turn into factual reality. Another explanation contends that Lola was too young to acknowledge that there was no rape at all and that she enjoyed their covert meeting in the dark garden with Marshall. In that instance, the crime takes on an even greater complexity.

In the book *Civilization and its Discontents*, Sigmund Freud writes "First, when we inquire as to how a person becomes guilty, we arrive at an answer that is indisputable: a person feels guilty (or sinful, as devout people would say) when he does something he knows to be 'bad'" (Freud, 71). A child's developing conscience, or superego as Freud calls it, is the stage in which he or she gradually acquires some self-control. Briony senses something was off that night, that there may be more to

what she “thought” than what she saw. The glazed surface of conviction had hidden cracks and imperfections. She was driven back, with a slight swooping sensation in her stomach, to the realisation that her knowledge was not solely based on what she witnessed clearly. Her guilt develops slowly; at first, it is suppressed by her fierce will to stand by her accusation.

Because Briony is the focus of her interpretation of what happened, she is easily able to fabricate the ending of the story or convey her desires into it. As soon as Briony realises this, she experiences even more guilt. She feels bad about her writing because she is aware of its power not just over the reader, but over history itself. She is aware that writing any story she wants is not difficult. She has the option to let Robbie survive the war, just as she had to put him in jail. Briony feels guilty about her life’s work because readers rely on her to tell them what really happened, and she transfers that shame to the canon of literature. From a moral, metaphysical and criminal standpoint, if Jaspers theory of guilt is to be applied to the members of the family and their guests, they would surely be found guilty (46). The guilt of each person for his or her immoral act is known as moral guilt. As a result, the entire family aside from Cecilia would be guilty of placing the blame of someone’s else’s actions on Robbie without any solid evidence.

The family holds Briony to be a trustworthy witness, most likely because of the family’s belief that a child is not intelligent or cunning enough to fabricate a story or anticipate the harm that accusing someone of something can do to an innocent party. Briony is also found guilty of perjury. In addition to being guilty from a moral standpoint, Briony is also guilty from a metaphysical one. The question Briony is

asked by the policeman during her interrogation is what raises the enormity of her guilt. This notion forms the basis of the etymology of the word innocence. The word's Latin origin is a compound of the negative prefix *in* and the verb *agnoscere*, which means "to acknowledge, recognise."

The police enquiry reduces Briony's options: She either saw or did not see. However, the structure of the knowledge is more complex than knowing or not knowing and the relationship between innocence and knowledge cannot be reduced to the straightforward binary relation of either/or. Therefore, her lying and her incapacity to discern between the various levels of acknowledgement constitute her crime rather than the act of lying itself. "Briony's story is therefore complex in its ethical implications, for while the revelation of her secret accuses her, the mystery of her motivations simultaneously excuses her" (Mathews 150). She was young and naive, so she did not have full knowledge of the import of the actions.

There is only an effort to atone in the novels. There are no victims here who require forgiveness. A long time passes before Cecilia acquires the courage to make amends for her transgression. Briony is at least partially responsible for the death of the victims. She can only attempt to express regret to allay her guilty conscience; she cannot turn back time.

Despite the heavily religious connotation of the term atonement, Briony is not a devout follower of religion. In general, the Tallis family does not practise any religion. A temple within their compound is mentioned; it is constructed "with no religious purpose at all, but to enhance the pastoral ideal" (McEwan 64). Briony is only reported to have gone to church once, and that was to attend Lola and Paul Marshall's wedding.

When Briony realises how serious her crime is and starts to feel guilty, she decides to move out of her family and work as a hospital nurse rather than attend college. “It seems like she’s taken on nursing as a sort of penance,” Cecilia writes to Robbie (McEwan 212). For a girl who is used to comfort, attention and praise, it is a sort of penance. She is chastised by the nurse in the ward for not carrying out the tasks assigned to her appropriately, in addition to the discomfort of cleaning bedpans daily: “She was abandoning herself to a life of strictures, rules, obedience, housework and a constant fear of disapproval” (276). This gives Briony a momentary sense of relief from her guilt. In a roundabout way, Briony begs of Robbie’s forgiveness by tending to the wounded soldiers.

Briony also tries to make amends for her transgression through writing. In 1935, she decides to depict the scene at the fountain from three distinct perspectives. After fifty-nine years of constant rewriting, she is finally able to write her novel, which features Cecilia and Robbie together, happy and alive. She acts in this way because she lacks “the courage of (her) pessimism” to acknowledge the reality and reveal the “pitiless” truth about their passing (371). Being a writer with “absolute powers of deciding outcomes, she is also God,” she knows she cannot fulfil her atonement (371).

Briony sees her attempt at writing the novel multiple times as a way to make amends, much as guilt causes Lady Macbeth to repeatedly wash her hands in an attempt to rid herself of the blood she imagines. It is only as her life draws to an end and her memory begins to fade that, she manages to make the two lovers happy in a made-up world. Despite being seventy-seven years old, she still feels guilty about

what she did when she was thirteen. She claims that her writing was only "a final act of kindness, a stand against oblivion and despair" (McEwan 372). She was not so "self-serving as to let the lovers forgive [her]" (372). The characters are forced to confront this guilt consciously.

Jacques Derrida in *On Cosmopolitanism and Forgiveness* holds that "Forgiveness forgives only the unforgivable…"(32). That one act is not the only reason why Briony cannot seem to move past her early sense of guilt. The guilt lasts longer and is more intense for a variety of reasons. She is unable to accept her horrible deeds and identify with its serious flaws because she has returned as an adult to study the people who were once their childhood selves. Her crime has far-reaching effects that were partly caused by fate and partially by the era in which they lived. Another aspect of the guilt is narcissistic self-pity. Through her writing, Briony feeds this kind of self-pity by constantly reminding herself of her transgression.

Briony Tallis, is a complex character. Her ever-evolving worldview and her place in the family are key components of her complexity. Briony's early experiences are shaped by her competition with her siblings and cousins, especially Lola. Furthermore, the effect of fairy tales function as a metaphor for Briony's quest to let go of oversimplified polarisations and comprehend the complexities of reality. Being the youngest of her siblings puts Briony in a modest and jealous position. When she refers to herself as merely 'The Ugly Duckling' and contrasts herself with her cousin Lola, it is clear that she feels inadequate. Her sense of inadequacy is heightened by the age-gap, which makes her think that her artistic endeavours are miserable and embarrassing. When faced with the complexity of the world, "she feels herself inferior and inadequate" (McEwan 59). "Briony felt the disadvantage of being two

years younger than the other girl, of having a full two years' refinement weigh against her, and now her play seemed a miserable, embarrassing thing" (McEwan 59).

Early on in the novel, Briony is drawn to the straightforwardness of a fairy tale and finds solace in the clarity it provides. She receives from the fairy tale a feeling of polarisation-based order that is consistent with her early perception of reality. But seeing what she sees at the fountain causes her view to shift, and she begins to see that life is more difficult than the fairy stories she had formerly believed in.

> Briony had her first, weak intimation that for her now it could no longer be fairy-tale castles and princesses, but the strangeness of the here and now, of what passed between people, the ordinary people she knew, and what power one could have over the other, and how easy it was to get everything wrong, completely wrong (64).

A fairy tale has contributed to her growth. It offers a symbolic expression of her inner tensions and solutions. She never questions the validity of its message or its content. She has to go through a time of hardship and tribulation, of inner development through tragedy, much like a fairy tale heroine. She grows up and transcends infantilism. She thus comes to terms with life's complexity and refuses the polarisation that had taken over her thoughts.

Atonement is a post-modern work that makes several allusions, either overtly or indirectly. Since children make up the majority of the novel's audience, it would be odd to exclude a fairy tale. Where else other than in fairy tales, where else are the primary childhood anxieties—human emotions, aggressiveness, self-assertion, disappointments, pubertal sexual drives and separation anxiety—better developed?

Through a variety of creative devices, the novel portrays Briony's developing viewpoint, from her early writing as a young child to her more sophisticated narrative style as she delves into the intricacies of interpersonal connections and human emotions. “Briony writes as if she was a little girl, possessed by a desire to have the world just so” (McEwan 228).

A basic paradox in Briony's personality is introduced in the first chapter of the novel: her love of order and its coexistence with an imaginative mind. One of the main themes that add to depth of Briony’s character is this conflict. It is evident from the outset of the novel that Briony’s personality is marked by a fundamental contradiction: her intense love of order and her vivid creativity, which paradoxically fuels her immature fantasies and makes it unlikely that she will soon grow up emotionally and intellectually. While Briony's love of order drives her (primarily in the first few chapters of the novel) to try and enforce archetypal structures on her plots, to fit her own and the characters she creates into roles she finds appealing in her reading, or to mimic the writing techniques that influence her, her capacity for imagination both induces and feeds her creativity. It would be fair to contend that the tragedy of *Atonement* stems from the young Briony’s decision to prioritise fiction above reality on the tragic night of the rape.

The novels that Briony reads shape the way she perceives and evaluates the world. Briony first believes that the situation involving Robbie and Cecilia is a typical melodramatic moment in which a rich girl is asked to marry a poor but deserving lad. “A proposal of marriage. Briony would not have been surprised. She herself had written a tale in which a humble woodcutter saved a princess from drowning and ended by marrying her” (McEwan 38).

In addition to her passion for structure, her vivid imagination and her drive, Briony also possesses conceit. This tendency mostly shows up in the way the Briony acts around her sister in Part I, however, it continues to nag the reader until the very end of the novel. Because Briony loves order, she detests her elder sister's mess. According to Briony, her elder sister lives in "a stew of unclosed novels, unmade bed, unemptied ashtrays" (McEwan 5).

The disarray in Cecilia's room may be a creative disorder, reflecting Cecilia's love of life, her wide range of desires and the unsettling stage of her existence that she is currently experiencing. Still, Briony lacks the creativity and compassion to recognise this possibility. Unaware of Briony, Robbie—another character in the novel who is undecided about his future and believes, like Briony, that he is an adventurous hero ready to take the world by storm—also resides in a very messy room.

Later in the novel, when Briony reaches the swimming pool in the Tallis grounds while looking for the lost twins, she envisions herself discovering the bodies of the boys floating on the surface of the water and writes about it: "She thought how she might describe it, the way they bobbed … and their clothed bodies softly collided and drifted apart …" (156)

Briony witnesses two sexual interactions in twenty four hours; both are misinterpreted and treated as spectacles. She relies on her judgment to understand and explain these acts. When she sees Robbie and Cecilia in the library, Briony believes she sees the villain assault Arabella, the Gothic heroine. "Her immediate understanding was that she had interrupted an attack, a hand-to-hand fight" (123). Briony views Cecilia and Robbie's infatuation as an assault. Unlike Lola and Paul's

sexual experience, Briony keeps her observations about what she sees in the library to herself. Briony feels compelled to view her sister's relationship with the person she loves as a betrayal of their love. Briony views such an incident as trauma; as a result, she portrays it as rape rather than as love. Trauma is defined as "an overwhelming experience of sudden or catastrophic events in which the response to the event [is] often delayed" (Caruth, *Unclaimed Experience* 11).

Briony cannot comprehend that both of them are in love, so she suppresses the importance of this occurrence until she sees Lola's and Paul's twofold portrayal of sexual activity. The event "repeats itself, exactly and unremittingly," as with any trauma (2). Briony uses Robbie's 'obscene' letter to Cecilia, which she interprets to be a proof of his villainy. Such illegal activity is associated with the deplorable, which is described as "immoral, sinister, scheming, and [the] shady" (Kristeva 4).

Since Cecilia and Robbie's sexual encounter take place all of a sudden and when Briony was too little to comprehend the importance of the incident, she witnesses it as traumatising. The awareness that the scenario is an exhibition of her suppressed desires—a disclosure that her hidden, pitiful longing has surfaced—is what causes Briony to express her dread. According to what she says, "…the scene was so entirely a realisation of her worst fears that she sensed that her over-anxious imagination had projected the figures onto the packed spines of novels" (McEwan 123).

The letter gives Briony a villain to represent her worries and her denial of desire in her story. Particularly, Robbie's mention of Cecilia's vagina and his desire to

execute cunnilingus horrifies her. The term “the word: she tried to prevent it sounding in her thoughts, and yet it danced there obscenely” describes her initial, traumatised reaction to the letter (McEwans 114).

Once more, she tries to suppress her sexuality by preventing the term from entering her mind. “As bonds are broken and relationships and personal safety are put into question, trauma often involves a radical sense of disconnection and isolation” (Watkiss 8). “No one in her presence had ever referred to the word’s existence, and what was more, no one, not even her mother, had ever referred to the existence of that part of her to which - Briony was certain - the word referred,” she says, revealing her naivete (McEwan 114).

Briony Tallis's goals, which stem from her admiration for structure and her vivid imagination, profoundly mould her personality and impact the events that transpire in *Atonement*. Briony’s narrative journey is made more difficult by the contradictions in her nature, the imposition of archetypal patterns and the results of placing fiction above reality. Her ability to imagine turns out to be a double-edged sword, inspiring creativity but also obstructing her view of the truths that eventually cause the terrible events in the novel.

Briony Tallis: The Traumatised Narrator

Briony Tallis is a multifaceted and traumatised narrator whose experiences and perceptions profoundly influence the story. This analysis re-examines McEwan's work by focusing on Briony's haunted psyche and her journey toward atonement, drawing on psychoanalytic and trauma theory. *Atonement* can be seen as a trauma narrative that centres on Briony’s struggle with her hidden sexuality. The central theme of the narrative is Briony’s incorrect perception of sexual engagement as rape.

Briony's reality turns into fiction because she cannot distinguish between fact and fiction, which is a basic component of the Freudian experience of the Uncanny. The traumatised narrator is compelled to give his/ her experience erratically, and the comic book writer intentionally structures his writing to mirror the "limited, obstructed vision" that the horrific event has produced. (Leese et al. 126)

According to Caruth, trauma results from a shock that imitates a physical threat but distorts the mind's perspective of time (Caruth, *Trauma* 61). The novel contains two instances of sexual activities that thirteen-year-old Briony observes, which causes her to repress her urges and impede her development into an adult. She sees Cecilia and Robbie's infatuation as an assault and her desires affect the decisions she makes. She sees her sister's relationship with the person she loves as a betrayal of their affection and because she views such a situation as traumatic, she interprets the act as rape and not as an act of love.

Briony is a traumatised narrator and this essentially results from her unique upbringing and environment, which shape her warped sense of reality. Important scenes, such as the letter and the fountain scene, are interpreted by her in a way that highlights the limitations of her perspective and the emotional filter through which she reads the tale as it unfolds. Briony's experiences—such as Robbie's treachery and rejection of her love—make her mental condition worse. These occurrences cause her to misinterpret and deviate from reality, giving the character fictitious reasons and actions.

Briony's experience has left her mentally trapped and tormented with constant memories. She takes solace in blaming and being upset with Robbie since she believes he has a lesser social rank than her and has betrayed her. Robbie is the victim

of her trauma, which muddies the narrative and serves to further legitimise her victimisation.

In *Atonement*, Briony Tallis embarks on a path of transformation. Robbie's misdirected letter exchange represents a pivotal moment. That being said, Briony's tenth year witnesses the start of this drastic shift as she immerses herself in what she sees to be a fairy tale world. Robbie, the person who passes Briony's heroic rescue test, is supposed to fit into the imaginary world that Briony crafts in her innocent and vulnerable imagination. She builds an image of this idyllic world, but it is destroyed when Robbie rejects her. Because of this discrepancy, Briony experiences trauma that warps reality and confines the rejection of her realm of trauma. However, "trauma" is the term for a broad category of experiences that are so varied and expansive that they necessitate a pluralistic understanding of the indescribable, one that acknowledges the trope's opposite or even opposing possibilities. (Balaev 6)

When considering Briony Tallis as a traumatised narrator, it becomes clear that transforming her terrible experiences into a story is a crucial step in her creative recovery. With several rewrites between its original idea in January 1940 and its ultimate form in March 1999, Briony's novel required nearly six decades from start to finish. The epilogue provides a poignant glimpse into Briony's path.

Literature or storytelling may be used to process and act out pain. James Pennebaker says "people who use writing to make sense of their traumatic life experiences felt happier and less anxious . . . those who made meaning out of their difficulty or gained insight from writing were healthier than those who simply wrote about the details of their day" (87). The narrative approach also structures Briony's

grief and frustration. This is an instance of an interruption in the narrative of psychological distress. Part One's structural fragmentation, in contrast to the rest of the novel's more concentrated narrative viewpoint (Part Two is told from Robbie's point of view, while Parts Three and Four feature Briony at different ages), greatly illustrates Briony's damaged mental state.

According to Miller, four types of traumas may be identified in novels. They are 1) Certain horrific occurrences that the characters experience, witness, or perform. 2) A story point where the work of fiction conveys, either directly or indirectly, a trauma experienced by the author. 3) Trauma experienced by the first- or third-person narrator of the story. and 4) Trauma experienced by the reader, maybe as a result of the vividness of the tragic events recounted. (Miller 75-76)

The story that McEwan writes then undoubtedly confirms and reiterates this. The story of *Atonement* follows the protagonist as she struggles with her regret and shame. The novel is structured into four sections: Parts One through Three and the brief but crucial "London 1999" conclusion. Briony uses her story to construct a new version of herself. As stated in the story, "It is only in this last version that my lovers end well... All the preceding drafts were pitiless" (McEwan 370), Briony attempts to atone for her transgression. The act of atonement or the process and the subjectification procedure occur together. As the novel maintains, "Briony's certainty that her feelings would not even register, still less provoke guilt, which gave her the strength to resist. In a generally pleasant and well- protected life, she had never really confronted anyone before. (60).

Nevertheless, as Briony uses writing to reassemble her subjectivity, another

force pulls her back, reminding her that nothing that happens in the story can alter reality. She is successful in crafting "dynamic narratives that render sensible and coherent the seeming chaos of human existence" (McAdams *Stories* 166), but she is powerless to stop Cecilia and Robbie from suffering the consequences that await them:

> But now I can no longer think what purpose would be served if, say I tried to persuade my reader . . . that Robbie Turner died of septicaemia at Bray Dunes on l June 1940, or that Cecilia was killed in September of the same year by the bomb that destroyed Balham Underground Station. That I never saw them in that year. (McEwan 70)

Her destruction is made possible by the way her narrative identity is constructed "The problem with these fifty-nine years has been this: how can a novelist achieve atonement when, with her absolute power of deciding outcomes, she is also God?... No atonement for God, or novelists, even if they are atheists"(71).

Through her experiences as a victim, victimiser and eyewitness to horrific events, Briony's story in *Atonement* eloquently examines the tremendous effects of trauma on her identity. She writes of the psychological toll these experiences have taken on her, wrestling with feelings of remorse and self-blame. Using writing, Briony returns to the traumatising moments and provides witness from an alternative viewpoint. Through this creative endeavour, she can free herself from her torturous inner world and find a cathartic release for the complicated feelings she is carrying.

Briony writes on the inner turmoil and emotional harm that people experience when they witness, perpetrate, or are the victims of a horrific incident. In the

meanwhile, Briony uses writing to transport herself back in time and space to the horrific occurrence and provides a fresh account of it, freeing her mind from the prison of remorse and self-blame. True atonement is not possible, though. The primary storylines of *Atonement* are the innumerable painful events that Briony goes through as a child and adolescent, her disorientation over her sexual inclination and her dysfunctional family dynamic. The issues of childhood and adolescence—particularly those related to family dynamics, developing environments and painful childhood experiences—are the main subjects of Ian McEwan's writing. Briony, the main character in *Atonement*, is one of the disturbed youngsters who make up the majority of the child characters.

The painful situations are superimposed as the top two conflicting discourses in Briony's plays, which are reflections of real-life events she has encountered. “How can a novelist achieve atonement when with her absolute power of deciding outcomes, she is also God?” (McEwan 34). Briony is the ultimate master of all speech in the fantastical setting of this play. Her damaged mental world finds solace in the knowledge that she is free to choose the fates and identities of every figure. “Self-exposure was inevitable the moment she described a character’s weakness; the reader was bound to speculate that she was describing herself. What other authority could she have?” (6) A crucial significance has been given to such a lovely event in comparison to her painful past. To adopt a little learning-forward stance and take in an immediate glimpse of the picture to fix it in his memory, the subject “overcomes, in a flutter of jubilant activity, the constraints of his prop” (Lacan 76).

As Briony delivers the testimony, she beams. However, Briony’s sense of achievement does not enable her to overcome trauma or advance towards

psychological maturity. Briony continues to worry that no one will come to see her or talk to her once she makes a false testimony. She has experienced yet another terrible trauma: her sister's lack of trust. "The cost of oblivious daydreaming was always this moment of return, the realignment with what had been before and now seemed a little worse" (McEwan 72).

In the end, Briony's atonement is about more than just making Robbie and Cecilia whole. It turns into a quest to face her painful past, look for the truth, and discover healing. In his concluding thoughts on the novel, McEwan highlights atonement's restorative quality, presenting it as a last act of charity against forgetfulness and hopelessness. Briony's journey towards atonement transforms into a potent investigation of the impact of trauma on her persona, showcasing the intricate relationship between one's past, creativity and the pursuit of recovery.

War, Loss and Traumatic Aftermath

War serves as a potent backdrop in Ian McEwan's *Atonement*, affecting the course of the story and moulding the lives of its characters. The novel explores the effects of the Second World War on individuals, families and relationships between people. This section examines the idea of loss in *Atonement*, with a focus on the quest for atonement by the characters and the transformational impact of war. The novel creates a complex tapestry that depicts the various effects of conflict, from Briony Tallis's misguided actions setting off a series of tragic events to the deft depiction of loss brought on by war.

The story, which is set against the turbulent backdrop of the Second World War, examines how the chaos of conflict upends lives, shatters relationships and

permanently alters the characters. *Atonement* adopts a unique strategy, crafting a story that goes beyond the typical depiction of combat on the battlefield. The war and atonement are intricately linked to the horrific aftermath that Briony Tallis endures in the novel. The story shows how Briony's conscience is greatly affected by the cycle of peace and war, which in turn shapes her personality and alters her understanding of reality. A series of events that take place against the backdrop of World War II are initiated by Briony's pivotal lie, which implicates Robbie Turner. This sets off her traumatic journey. Here, the war becomes a symbolic embodiment of Briony's inner turmoil and a means of illustrating the dramatic consequences of her deeds. The connection between crime and war points to a similarity between Briony's internal turmoil and the disorder outside of her head. War emerges as the novel goes on, implying that Briony's deception had a direct impact on the events that followed. Through deft manipulation of Briony's ego, the author highlights the fact that, from her point of view, nothing else between 1935 and the retreat to Dunkirk matters. The significance of her role in the developing conflict is emphasised by this narrative decision.

While *Atonement* addresses a variety of traumas, such as those caused by war and culture, this study focuses exclusively on psychological trauma, which appropriately addresses the central theme of the novel. This study emphasises two key theories on the development of trauma: Freud's theory that sexual repression, which he calls "hysteria" and Lacan's theory that trauma arises from "the birth of subject with the use of language" and "the loss of unity with the mother" ("Studies of Hysteria" 3, *Seminar of Jacques Lacan* 84). Furthermore, a Freudian dream interpretation is applied here to examine Briony and Robbie's terrifying

dreams. Dominik LaCapra's concepts of "acting-out" and "working-through" trauma are crucial to understand why the characters react in a particular manner to the horrific reality they are put into and how they strive to escape it (70). Based on these tenets, this study promotes the idea that trauma is an intricate and all-encompassing process that is beyond the scope of depiction. Acting out involves re-enacting the experience compulsively and repetitively. Individuals who act out struggle to distinguish between past, present, and future thoughts. They are afflicted by what occurred to them and are trapped in the agonising past. (LaCapra 70)

Harold Blooms's essay on this book addresses this subject by subtly referencing the primary contradiction of the idea that in inanimate things the drive develops as a defence, and especially as a defence against the traumatic imposition of life; that life started as a fight to get back to death (Bloom 120). Bloom emphasises the drive's nonlocation and interprets Freud's idea of the drive as a borderland concept in the context of the contamination of drive and defence. Freud's encounter with the military traumas of the World Wars gave rise to this thesis of the will to die.

The idea of loss permeates Ian McEwan’s *Atonement*; the characters suffer numerous tragic and depressing losses. The novel explores the profound effects of individual and societal losses against the turbulent backdrop of World War II. This section explores the complex layers of loss that are portrayed in the novel, including the effects of poor decisions, the division brought on by conflict and the broken relationships that leave irreversible emotional damage on victims.

War in *Atonement* is not just a setting; rather, it is a transforming force that causes the characters to suffer severe psychological trauma. The story’s vivid

depiction of Robbie's experiences as a soldier exposes the reader to the horrors of war. The contrast between his hardships during the war and the happy life he once led with Cecilia highlights the terrible effects of conflict on a person's mental health. Robbie experiences a psychological transformation as a result of the war, going from a romantic and idealistic person to a soldier struggling with the harsh realities of combat. The characters' perception of themselves and the development of their relationships are determined by the trauma of war, making the road to redemption even more difficult to navigate.

To make a connection between Robbie's internal and external struggles, the story introduces a minor tale about the French soldier Luc Cornet. The depiction of both characters as fighting a war within a war highlights the genuine and authentic aspects of conflict as opposed to the deceptive appearance of peace. How Briony's empathetic aid to Luc Cornet is interpreted as a correction to her initial transgression against Robbie serves as additional evidence of the connection between individual and societal traumas.

Characters experience turmoil in their lives as a result of the Second World War, especially Robbie Turner and the Tallis family. After being wrongly accused by Briony, Robbie ends up behind bars and is eventually forced to enlist in the French military. The war not only changes his course but also shatters the perfect bond he had with Cecilia. Robbie's experiences as a soldier contrast sharply with the peace of his pre-war life as the novel shifts to the war era. The normalcy he was accustomed to is replaced with the horrific scenes of death and desperation that portray the horrors of war. The chaos that follows war shatters relationships and exposes people to a world without stability or peace.

The suddenness of war claims the Tallis household, which was once a refuge of relative calm. The unjust imprisonment of Robbie and his subsequent separation from Cecilia cause animosity and dissatisfaction within the family. Robbie and the Tallis family have a friendly relationship, but the war becomes a disruptive force. Briony's action weakens family ties; which are further enfeebled by miscommunication and tensions during the war. The breakdown of the family is further aggravated by the absence of Jack Tallis, the patriarch, who works for the Ministry coordinating the war effort.

Additionally, the war becomes a force that divides family members who were once close to each other. Once inseparable, Briony and Cecilia part ways as the war spreads to Britain. After learning that her accusation was untrue, Briony gives up on her plans to go to the University of Cambridge and decides to become a nurse out of guilt. Briony's quest for redemption is sparked by the war, which forces her to take stock of her life and commit herself to aiding those impacted by the fighting. The war is portrayed in the novel as a force for transformation, compelling characters to face their past and look for atonement amid chaos.

When war breaks out, the symbolic calm within the family is destroyed, reflecting the historical events taking place on a worldwide scale. The story easily switches between internal strife within the Tallis family and real-world conflicts in section two of the novel, which takes Robbie Turner's point of view. Through his interactions with the French brothers, Robbie's trip to Dunkirk introduces the rhetoric, reflecting the two-party divide that was common during the war. Robbie is shocked by the war and he expresses his determination to fight back against the approaching

German invasion while he struggles with the shame of retreat. Robbie takes comfort in thinking of Cecilia as a way to escape the harsh reality of war amidst the chaos.

The Tallis family is another example of how the us/them dichotomy exists. Cecilia writes to Robbie describing an irreversible rift with her family because of their snobbery and indifference. Cecilia decides to break away because of the wounds caused by war, which she reveals through her open disclosures regarding her family's behaviour. Her moving words capture her feelings of bitterness and disillusionment in contrast to her newfound happiness in a different life. The letter highlights the difficult decision she had to make between Robbie and her family and the unresolvable conflict in the Tallis home. Henry Bonnet, the French character, reacts with incredulity to the return of the war, much as the Tallis family does to their inner struggles. The idea that considering their neglect, the parents ought to have been involved in the argument further complicates the dynamics within the family. Cecilia's imagined battlefield captures the poignant warfare that goes on within the Tallis family and highlights the long-lasting effects of war on interpersonal relationships and individual psyches. "All that fighting we did twenty-five years ago. All those dead. Now the Germans back in France. In two days they'll be here, taking everything we have. Who would have believed it?" (McEwan 123).

Atonement depicts the horrors of war through the experiences of its main characters, Robbie Turner and Cecilia Tallis in particular. The novel explores the psychological and emotional effects of war on the lives of the characters, both literally and figuratively. Initially portrayed as a happy couple, Robbie and Cecilia find their lives turned upside down when the threat of war materialises. Once dormant and

seemingly idyllic, their romantic relationship turns into a source of conflict and misfortune when outside factors like wickedness, injustice, hypocrisy and societal lies come into play.

The connection between their love and the difficulties it presents begs the question of whether their romance is enhanced by the obstacles they encounter or if their intense emotions are a protective response to the difficulties they face. As the conflict intensifies, their lives come to symbolise the greater idea that everyday existence oscillates between peace and war, with the former existing only in the mind's eye and the latter standing as a harsh, unavoidable reality. Robbie and Cecilia are portrayed in the novel as prisoners of a war, both real and imagined. Their imagination is their only solace from the chaos outside. The touching discovery that they have been communicating their love through letters despite the turmoil of the conflict emphasises the symbolic nature of their relationship and how their emotional ties act as a coping mechanism in the face of destruction.

The plot’s use of dreams and imagination as a leitmotiv highlights how hopeless their response to the war was. Robbie's harsh reality of life during the war is contrasted with hopes for love and peace. The melancholic refrain “I'll be here waiting for you. Come back” captures the difficulty of holding onto ideals of peace in the face of the terrible reality of war (McEwan 123). Paul Marshall is presented in the novel as a contrast to Robbie, he is morally distant from Robbie because of his war dreams. Robbie endures the hardships of war valiantly and dreams of peace, while Paul personifies the thuggish and lecherous aspects of war. The novel’s examination of the injustice and cruelty of war is aided by the antagonist’s and hero’s divergent outcomes.

McEwan's Use of Unreliable Narration and Trauma

Briony keeps her identity as the novel's narrator a secret until the very end, which furthers suspicions about the veracity of her account of Robbie and Cecilia's happy reunion. Throughout the novel, the reader is left to speculate on multiple occasions because of the unreliable narrator.

The last chapter of the novel switches to Briony's first-person perspective after the story is told from alternate third-person points of view throughout. This change confirms that Briony is not just a fallible narrator, but also an unreliable one. Olson makes a distinction between unreliable and fallible narrators, arguing that the former makes situational motivated errors as a result of outside influences such as experience or age (98). Age-related misperceptions cause Briony to interpret a sexual encounter as an attack, which starts a series of events that will determine the plot. At first, Briony's misperceptions are ascribed to her age, but as the narrative goes on, her decisions and experiences make it harder to determine where Briony's projections end and where the perceptions of other characters begin. The novel makes the argument that Briony uses her storytelling as a means of escape from the ordinary reality of her existence. Her interaction with made-up realities makes it difficult to distinguish between reality and fiction, which invites readers to consider the complex nature of faulty narration.

The line separating reality from fantasy is called into question by Briony's interaction with them. Her constant engagement with made-up stories turns into an escape from her everyday existence. The work challenges readers to consider the complex interrelationships between fact and fiction as Briony negotiates the

difficulties of unreliable narration influenced by personal worldviews. Moreover, *Atonement* investigates inter-subjectivity as a fundamental component of narrative comprehension and storytelling.

Unreliable narrators with traumatic pasts appear in *Atonement*. The narrators omit significant details, emotions and character and situation descriptions, as the story progresses. The entire novel's plot is initiated by the traumatic event, which culminates in the deaths of Robbie and Cecilia. Although Briony's feelings regarding Cecilia and Robbie's passing are not fully explained, the novel itself serves as an apology and an attempt to immortalise them. The novel suggests that Briony found their deaths to be a "disturbing experience", as she states at the end that "she would never undo the damage"; she is not to be forgiven (McEwan 269). She feels so deeply troubled by her accusation of guilt and the deaths of the lovers that she thinks she will never be able to forgive herself. Her sense of guilt intensifies her experience of demonstrating the profound impact of their deaths.

On the other hand, Briony twists the concept of narrative and traumatic memory since her narration appears in *Atonement* primarily in the form of real memories. Her story is entirely made up, for the most part. But this information is not revealed to us until the very end of the novel when Briony attempts to make contact again, claiming that her novel is "a final act of kindness...to let my lovers live" (351). As she gets older and realises how dangerous it is to paint Robbie as a rapist, Briony writes her novel as an atonement, an apology and a quest for atonement. She is a web of inconsistency and vulnerability. Briony's deep shame over the lives she took is what drives her to write a novel. As a result, her guilt contributes to her fallibility and

her decision to fabricate a story makes her appear untrustworthy. It is clear from this combination of fallibility and unreliability that narrators with a history of trauma cannot be fully captured by Booth's model of narration (304).

Briony's narrative attempts to evoke a sense of what they experienced, but they do not present characters and events accurately. This is where they share similarities. She only divulges to the reader information she thinks is appropriate. It also demonstrates that, given that she is writing from memory, the harm has already been done before the novel even begins and there is no way for the reader to discern any difference between the times she witnessed the two sexual acts and the present. Furthermore, she does not reveal that she is the narrator until the very end of the novel when she says that she made up the majority of the plot. Readers are left to judge Briony's actions, making this fabrication a particularly evident example of the story's unreliability and how it draws the reader in.

Therefore, it is possible that Briony is partially right when she seeks to convey particular emotions to her audience. She would do this by telling a story that evokes a particular emotion rather than providing an accurate account. By using this method, the author can elicit the same sense of trauma in the reader as well as convey the state of mind of the narrator.

Being a part of a story's narrative can also cause one to experience the after-effects of trauma. Since readers have the last word on whether or not Briony has atoned for her devastating lie, readers are included in McEwan's *Atonement*. In this sense, the readers become active participants in the fictional narrative, not only because they are granted the ability to judge and are complicit in the story, but also

because they must constantly discern between the narrator's fabrications and the truth. In the meantime, readers expand on Booth's model of narration by realising that trauma is the root cause of unreliability (304). Because “unreliable narration...is a mode of indirect communication,” the author uses unreliable narrators to convey the feeling of trauma (Phelan 9). Notwithstanding its source or impact, untrustworthy narration serves as a means of communication. As an attempt to make up for her errors, Briony tells the tale of a disillusioned and generally unlikeable young girl. She rewrites history to create a different version of herself, one in which her mistakes are less severe.

The confined atmosphere of Briony's childhood on the Tallis estate, which serves as a physical and mental prison for her, is highlighted. It also explores the lack of parental direction as her mother's apathy and her father's continual absence, adds to Briony’s distorted perception of sex and her generally untrustworthy narrative. Briony’s story is significantly impacted by her traumatic experiences, which include her love for Robbie, feeling betrayed and rejected, and seeing her sister get attacked in the library. This chapter continues to argue that Briony's perspective is untrustworthy because, despite being an adult narrator, these horrific events and PTSD have a significant impact on her narration. The relationship between her psychological condition and the inaccuracy of the account is furthered by the allusions to her mental stress, bewilderment and unprovoked behaviours, which are in fact external manifestations of her trauma.

Raised in a restricted setting akin to a jail, the Tallis estate physically and emotionally confines Briony. Meanwhile, little Briony suffers from the lack of

parental role models due to her mother's ill health, her father's frequent absences from the home, and their lack of interest in their children. Consequently, her naive perception of sex is warped. However, the narrator's perception of the people and events may be different from the "judgement of the implied author" due to his/her young age (Tan 106).

The primary cause of Briony's unreliability as a narrator in *Atonement* is her horrific experience. Yes, but at that point Briony—the real narrator of the story—is an adult rather than the stubborn 13-year-old. Even after she finishes writing this autobiographical narrative, her terrible experiences and post-traumatic stress disorder continue to have a subtle but lasting impact on her story.

Briony's sister chastises her at the dinner table for yelling at the twins for wearing her socks after she sees her sister getting 'raped' in the library. Young Briony is traumatised by the betrayal once again after receiving a reprimand from her sibling. But because her sister serves as the family's "mother's agent", Briony is compelled to forgive her sister out of instinct (Yang 100). As a result, she is imprisoned in a mental asylum, where her sole solace is directed towards Robbie, who is both her inferior and a person who has "betrayed" her. Some of Briony's actions, which appear to be spontaneous in this sequence of coincidences, are external manifestations of her trauma.

> Some critics wholly embrace the idea of a complete cure or absolute redemption through writing or narrating, most acknowledge the compulsion for trauma victims to express their stories and that retelling their experiences helps them survive (Rolen 4).

The idea of recounting tragedy from Briony's point of view is consistent with critics' recognition of the need of trauma survivors to share their stories and the healing power of storytelling. This realisation strengthens the impact of trauma in Briony's storytelling by providing further context to understand why her painful experiences affected her story.

From a strictly structural perspective, McEwan uses an expansive style to highlight specific times in the story's text. By dragging readers into these languid, enticing passages, he is also underlining these instances for them. To convince us to give these moments the same weight as the individuals involved do, McEwan pulls the reader into them. To put it briefly, McEwan has aligned reader encounters with character encounters by using the swelling moment approach.

The characters' psychological processing of the incident takes centre stage, rather than the actual incident itself. Character awareness then becomes the moment's focal point, highlighting the brain's stark humanity as it quickly handles a crucial circumstance. McEwan aims to portray the characters' sense of relativity towards time as they go through their dramatic moments by extending the text to encompass all the details of the scenario and modifying the duration of the narrative. There is a clear correlation between McEwan's use of the stretched moment and character cognition.

That is, the action in the scene seems to be slowed down and consequently the narrative duration, by the clear and concise investigations of the protagonists' fast-paced cognitive processes. That is not to argue that slower narrative pacing is the result of such thought reporting in every case. Similar to numerous novelists before him, McEwan frequently utilises this kind of in-depth character thought reporting

during the narrative pause or during the untimed duration. This indicates that McEwan's slowing down of the story's pacing is a subjective category that is closely tied to character consciousness.

Finally, *Atonement* delves deeply into the repercussions of trauma, conflict, and story formation while exploring the complexity of guilt and youthful imagination within the historical setting of England in the 20th century. The examination of guilt and childhood imagination in *Atonement* takes place against the backdrop of 20th century England. The development of guilt is greatly influenced by the fantasies of childhood, as demonstrated by the character of Briony Tallis. The traumatised narrator, Briony Tallis, provides a distinctive viewpoint on the after effects of guilt and the impact of tragedy. The work explores the devastating aftermath, war and loss and shows how these events have a deep influence on the individuals. The representation of trauma is made more complex by McEwan's use of unreliable narration, which highlights the subjectivity of memory and the difficulties involved in conveying a tale.

In essence, *Atonement* examines the nuances of childhood imagination and guilt against the backdrop of 20th-century England. It explores the effects of trauma, loss and conflict and looks at how childhood fantasies contribute to the formation of guilt. It presents Briony Tallis as a traumatised narrator. The investigation of these subjects is further enhanced by McEwan's use of erratic narrative.

With her unique viewpoint on the aftermath of trauma and the psychological ramifications of guilt, Briony Tallis offers valuable insights into the psychological intricacies of childhood trauma. The novel explores the distressing incidents and confusion that Briony goes through as a youngster and teenager, emphasising the

influence of family relationships and traumatic early life experiences on the emergence of trauma. The representation of trauma is given further depth by McEwan's use of narrative and erratic narration, which highlights the subjectivity of memory and the difficulties in comprehending and dealing with childhood trauma.

Chapter 4

Cracking India: Childhood Amidst National Trauma

Bapsi Sidhwa's *Cracking India* is a moving examination of childhood trauma against the backdrop of the Partition of the Indian subcontinent, one of the most turbulent times in the history of South Asia. Sidhwa's story takes place in Lahore and its surrounding villages between 1943 and 1948— in the years immediately preceding and following Partition. The story is narrated through the perspective of Lenny Sethi, a little Parsee girl who has polio. The novel provides a nuanced depiction of the catastrophic effects of political unrest and communal violence on human lives from Lenny's point of view.

The novel was first published as *Ice-Candy-Man* in 1988 and later republished as *Cracking India* in 1991.This chapter examines how Sidhwa's portrayal of Lenny's childhood experiences serves as a powerful metaphor for the collective trauma suffered by the people of the Indian subcontinent during Partition. Through an analysis of key scenes and Lenny's evolving perspective, this chapter demonstrates how Sidhwa uses the vehicle of childhood to convey the devastating impact of Partition on the individual psyche and the lasting scars it leaves on the next generation.

Cracking India is fundamentally a very personal story that goes beyond space and time to provide readers with a global reflection of the human condition. Through Lenny's observations, the novel allows one to see the disintegration of a society split along religious and ethnic lines. The novel also uncovers the human spirit's ability to persevere in the face of hardship.

The narrative unfolds a poignant coming-of-age story set against the backdrop of a nation torn apart by violent strife and communal violence escalating in the wake of Partition as Lenny, the young protagonist navigates the complexities of religious differences and ethnic tensions. Through Lenny's innocent yet perceptive lens, the novel sheds light on the human cost of dividing a country along religious lines, portraying the horrors, struggles and resilience of individuals caught in the tumultuous aftermath of Partition.

Cracking India explores how youthful innocence is entwined with the reality of political unrest and community struggle. This chapter looks at how Sidhwa handles the difficulties of trauma and identity formation that people had to undergo in the context of India's war for independence and the partition which gave rise to Pakistan.

The novel focuses on the effects of communal violence on people's lives, especially on one of the most vulnerable sections of society—children. Readers are given glimpses of the agony and terror that pervade daily life amid the growing hostilities among Hindus, Muslims and Sikhs, through Lenny's experiences. Sidhwa skilfully illustrates the tremendous psychological costs of residing in a violently divided community by examining how religious hate and political turmoil erode infant innocence. In addition, *Cracking India* provides a sophisticated examination of identity and belonging amid upheaval and exile. Readers are asked to consider how communal boundaries create individual and social identities as they follow Lenny across the constantly changing terrain of Lahore.

Sidhwa emphasises the intricacies of mutual cooperation and the enduring links that transcend religious and ethnic boundaries through Lenny's contacts with

people from a variety of religions and cultural backgrounds. This chapter explores the thematic richness of the novel as well as Sidhwa's storytelling strategies. It also looks at how she handles the complexity of childhood trauma in the face of political unrest in the country.

The story begins with Lenny's idyllic childhood in Lahore, where she spends her days playing with her friends and wandering around the city with her ayah, Shanta. Shanta is Lenny's primary connection to the outside world. Ayah is extremely beautiful and her beauty and voluptuousness attract the attention of a motley group of admirers. Ayah's admirers belong to different races, religions and creed but they are bound together by their unalloyed devotion towards Ayah. However the equations among Ayah's admirers change with the announcement of Partition. Religious and communal identities begin to solidify even among Ayah's admirers.

Communal animosity is at its zenith and the Ice-Candy-Man tricks Lenny into revealing Ayah's hiding place. Ayah is abducted, made to work in Lahore's brothels and is eventually forced to marry her abductor. Ice-Candy-Man's love for Ayah dissipates in the face of religious bigotry. Ayah is evidently repulsed at the turn of events and with Lenny's Godmother's aid she is taken to a Recovered Women's Camp and is then eventually reunited with her family in Amritsar. A dejected Ice-Candy-Man, follows Ayah's trajectory, however their relationship is frayed and beyond repair.

Contextual Background: The Partition of India

The Partition of India in 1947 was a pivotal event in South Asian history. It marked the division of British India into two independent nation states of India and Pakistan. This separation was based on religious lines, with India being a predominantly Hindu country and Pakistan being created as a separate homeland for Muslims. Partition was a response to increasing religious tensions and demands for separate nations, which had been building up over several decades. The British colonial rule in India, which lasted for nearly three centuries, played a significant role in laying the groundwork for the partition.

The British 'Divide and Rule' policy, which categorised people according to religion and treated them as separate entities, was a major contributor to the development of communal tensions. The Indian independence movement, which gained momentum in the early 20th century, was marked by differing visions for the future of India. The Indian National Congress, led by figures like Mahatma Gandhi and Jawaharlal Nehru, advocated a unified, secular India. In contrast, the Muslim League, led by Muhammad Ali Jinnah, demanded a separate homeland for Muslims, citing concerns about the safety and representation of Muslims in a Hindu-majority India.

The Second World War and its aftermath further complicated the situation. The British government, weakened by the war, was forced to consider granting independence to India. The Muslim League's demand for a separate state gained momentum and Jinnah's leadership became more assertive in demanding a separate homeland for Muslims.

The British government, realising that a unified India was no longer feasible,

began to consider partition as a viable option. Lord Louis Mountbatten, the last Viceroy of India, was tasked with overseeing the transition to independence and was instrumental in convincing the Indian leaders to accept Partition. The commission's work was marked by controversy, with the final borders satisfying neither the Indian National Congress nor the Muslim League.

Partition led to one of the largest and most tragic human migrations in history, with millions of people moving between India and Pakistan. The process was accompanied by widespread communal violence, with estimates suggesting that between two hundred thousand to two million people lost their lives (Butalia 8).

The Partition of the Indian subcontinent was a complex and multifaceted event, driven by a combination of historical, political and religious factors. The British colonial legacy, the differing visions of Indian independence and growing communal tensions all contributed to the eventual division of British India into two separate nations. Partition's legacy continues to shape the politics and identity of the region, making the understanding of the event crucial to the study of the modern history of South Asia.

Bapsi Sidhwa remarks that her intention to write *Cracking India* is primarily political. She felt that literature on the Partition has "…been unfair to the Pakistanis" and has attempted in this work to redress in her own small ways "a very grievous wrong that has been done to Jinnah and Pakistanis by many Indian and British writers" (qtd. in Kapadia and Dhawan 21). Sidhwa has, as Laurel Graeber opines "attempted to give a Pakistani perspective to the partition of India" (7).

To bring home the realities of Partition's effects, Sidhwa presents Lenny as a figure who finds it difficult to distinguish between the literal and figurative interpretation of the concept. Lenny worries about how the divide is practically conceivable when she overhears conversations about it “This side for Hindustan and this side for Pakistan. If they want two countries, that’s what they’ll have to do—crack India with a long, long canal” (Sidhwa 101). Likewise upon hearing Aunt Mini discuss the partition of Punjab, Lenny comments “Won’t their water drain into the jagged cracks? Not satisfied by breaking India, they now want to tear up the Punjab” (124).

Lenny is frequently shown to have difficulty distinguishing between the literal and symbolic meanings of Partition to understand the ‘reality’ of its effects. Lenny, for example, questions how the nation will be divided materially when she overhears talks about it, There is much disturbing talk. India is going to be broken. Can one break a country? And what happens if they break it where our house is? Or crack it further up on Warris Road? How will I ever get to Godmother’s then?” (101).

Communities that had lived side by side for millennia find themselves on opposing sides as the new borders were drawn. Families are shattered and neighbours quickly become rivals. Horrible violence mar the ensuing migration, as community and religious tensions burst into extensive crimes and carnage. The displacement of millions of Hindus, Muslims and Sikhs resulted in one of the biggest and most devastating migrations in history.

The formerly diverse city of Lahore saw widespread violence, forced conversions and conflicts between communities. The communal violence that occurred during the Partition damaged the region’s social fabric and has had a long-

lasting effect on its people's mental health. Bapsi Sidhwa sets her story inside this historical crucible, depicting the agony endured by people such as Lenny Sethi, whose innocence is lost to governmental actions and social unrest.

Lenny's discussion of "the Mountbatten plan to tear up the Punjab," (Sidhwa 121) with her aunt, narrates the effects of British rule ending in India, the rise of competing conservative-nationalist narratives and how they interact with the prevailing patriarchal ties that pervade Lenny's neighbourhood's "compressed universe" (11). Lenny's close bond with her ayah and her trips to the Sikh/ Muslim village of Pir Pindo also allow her to step beyond the wealthy sphere of the Parsee community and expose her to the diverse cultural background of Lahore's socio-political community as a whole.

By deftly combining the political and personal aspects of trauma, Sidhwa illuminates the significant influence that historical occurrences have on the lives of common people. The turmoil, suffering and displacement that marked this crucial period in South Asian history are brought to life to the readers through Lenny's perspective — highlighting the novel's examination of children in the face of a national tragedy. The intricate interactions of religious, cultural and political forces that shaped the socio-political environment during India's Partition resulted in a profound change in the social structure of Lahore. This change was primarily caused by the communalisation of politics, in which religious identities were used as effective tools to rally support for opposing visions of the future.

From being a sharply satirical chronicle of Indian and Pakistani history, the novel transforms into elegiac lore, as foreshadowed by lines from Iqbal's prologue:

> The fire of verse gives us courage and bids me no more to be faint with dust in my mouth. I am abject: to God I make no complaint/Sometimes you favour our rivals then sometimes with us. You are free/I am sorry to say it so boldly. You are no less fickle than we. (Sidhwa 15)

Cracking India provides a realistic account of a troubled period in history as well as offers an engrossing look into South Asian society. It also chronicles a child's educational journey, readying her for adulthood and its darker aspects.The novel paints a picture of a world where feminine ideals will prevail, where Ice-Candy-Man turns into “a truly harmless fellow,” and where “the guard lets down his guard” (220) .

Lenny’s experiences in *Cracking India* are set against the backdrop of the socio-political milieu during the Partition. To show how these high-level factors affect people daily, Bapsi Sidhwa deftly navigates the complex web of political intrigue, religious zeal and societal collapse. Lenny’s suffering is not only a personal tragedy for her and those around her, but it is also reflective of the greater socio-political turmoil that characterises this crucial period in history. Hence, Sidhwa’s story takes on a heart-breaking quality as it examines the human cost of political choices and inter-communal conflict during the Partition.

Cracking India examines the psychological effects of communal trauma on the Parsee minority during India’s partition. Colonel Bharucha leads the Parsee community, which eschews direct combat in favour of non-involvement to preserve their way of life. Lenny, the protagonist of the novel, nonetheless, exposes the community’s problems, anxieties and inner conflicts. The Parsees are unable to break

free from the prevailing climate of violence, relocation, and inter-communal strife despite their steadfast dedication to non-involvement. Lenny's viewpoint highlights the inevitable psychological effects of social conflict since even being apathetic does not completely protect people from the suffering that is going on all around them. The psychological impacts present themselves in a range of manifestations, such as dread, vulnerability and internal tension among communities as well as the wish to stay out of it. Sidhwa provides a remarkable glimpse into the nuances of collective pain at a difficult moment in history by deftly capturing the various emotions and emotional struggles of individuals in the Parsee community.

> Let whoever wishes rule! Hindu, Muslim, Sikh, Christian! We will abide by the rules of their land; and [a]s long as we do not interfere we have nothing to fear! As long as we respect the customs of our rulers—as we always have—…" (Sidhwa 48)

Moreover, children typically bear the brunt of all this uncertainty since they are defenceless against harm. *Cracking India*'s female narrator is largely protected, but Partition has left many children 'lost'—lost to their villages and towns. Ranna's horrific survival story is presented in the novel. His uncle is beheaded.

> His older brothers, his cousins. The Sikhs were among them like hairy vengeful demons, wielding bloodied swords, dragging them out, as a handful of Hindus darting about the fringes, their faces vaguely familiar and pointed out and identified Musalmaans by name. (99)

"I beg you in the name of all you hold sacred, don't kill the little ones," Ranna heard his father plead (162). "Make them Sikhs … Let them live … they are so

little… ” Suddenly the noon light smote their eyes. Dost Mohammad stepped out and walked three paces (Sidhwa 162).

Ranna witnesses the murder of all of his family members since his brothers and uncles are also beheaded. In addition, he sustains a severe cut to his head during the family's murder, which causes him to tumble upon the mass of bloody bodies. He imagines his eleven-year-old sister Khadija running about the court completely nude, her long hair ruffled, her physique broken like a boy, her lips cut and puffed, and her upper teeth cracked in a blood shell.

> He felt a blow cleave the back of his head and the warm flow of blood. Ranna fell just inside the door on a tangled pile of unrecognizable bodies. Someone fell on him, drenching him in blood. Every time his eyes open the world appears to them to be floating in blood. (162)

Ranna goes through these terrible experiences, but fortunately, he escapes the Sikh mob's ruthless massacre. Lenny is unable to recognise Ranna because he looks nothing like the person she knew before the partition; for the parts of his body have turned dark and feeble, and he is so skinny that Lenny can feel the air on his neck and lungs.

Imam Din's cautions about possible problems are refuted by the Sikh scripture reader, who predicts inter-racial and inter-religious unity. This instance offers a moving reflection on the precarious peace that prevailed before the escalation of inter-communal hostilities throughout the Partition.

The episode of Ranna's story in the novel shifts Lenny understands of

communal pain dramatically. Lenny pays a visit to their family chef Imam Din's village. It is there that she encounters Ranna, Imam Din's animated and content great-grandson. Ranna gives Lenny an insight into rural life in India before the Partition.

Muslims and Sikhs live in harmony in Pir Pindo. However, following the division, the Sikh rabble besieges Pir Pindo. The Sikhs violently murder Muslims and abuse Muslim women. Ranna's father begs the vicious Sikh mob at Pir Pindo to spare the lives of Muslim children. But the Sikhs in a violent spree end up killing every Muslim and their children. Ranna sees his father's head cut out of his neck in addition to seeing other horrible violence. Lenny understands of collective trauma changes as she observes the conversion of a peaceful society into a violent, unstable environment. After her innocence is dashed, Lenny witnesses first-hand the terrible effects of political and religious unrest on the everyday lives of people, particularly the village children who dwell on the borders of the recently formed nations. Through the story of Ranna, Sidhwa illustrates the connection between individual and societal suffering during the turbulent Partition era by capturing both the larger story of community trauma and particular personal encounters of suffering.

When asked about the possibility of religious skirmish in Pir Pindo, the Sikh granthi says, "…our villages come from the same racial stock, Muslim or Sikh, we are basically Jats. We are brothers. How can we fight each other?" (Sidhwa 64). Paradoxically, one of the most frightening stories concerns the riots at Pir Pindo.

Communities that had previously been united by interfaith dialogue and common cultural customs break down along religious lines. Trust weakens, giving birth to mistrust and hostility. One community's suffering would invariably have an

impact on the whole social structure, creating a vicious circle of retaliation and revenge. Locations that had formerly been emblems of peace turn into conflict zones, and the wounds of intergroup violence persist for many generations. The psychological effects go well beyond the initial injury. There was a significant psychological cost to both people and communities; many struggled with post-traumatic stress disorder, survivor's guilt, and a generalised sense of dislocation. The narratives of people who experienced the Partition are shaped by trauma, including the loss of a homeland and recollections of violence experienced or seen. Bapsi Sidhwa depicts these devastating effects of Partition on people and communities through Lenny Sethi's eyes. Sidhwa's account demonstrates how the trauma of the Partition ended not just with physical violence, but with a total change in societal dynamics.

Lenny's Perception of Communal and Personal Trauma

Bapsi Sidhwa's *Cracking India* illustrates the communal anguish brought on by the hurried and postponed preparation of the Partition. The tale highlights the irresponsibility of boundary delineation by equating the Radcliffe Commission's arbitrary separation of Indian cities to a sloppy card game

Lenny's mocking comment on her rapid change in national identity illustrates the heartless nature of political scheming. The arbitrary nature of the separation and its wider effects on the subcontinent are depicted from the point of view of Lenny. During this time of religious turmoil, Lenny, a young and perceptive heroine, experiences a fundamental change in her understanding of the world as she learns about the nuances of religious distinctions. The abrupt shifts she notices in others

across her, particularly in the circle of Ayah's admirers, is what cause her to undergo this metamorphosis. The sudden shift represents a significant transformation in how people are perceived and treated in society, and is not merely a movement in perspective. Lenny's perspective highlights the psychological toll that religious and community conflicts take on an individual and they considerably influence how she perceives the world.

> It is sudden. One day everybody is themselves—and the next day they are Hindu, Muslim, Sikh, Christian. People shrink, dwindling into symbols. Ayah is no longer just my all-encompassing Ayah—she is also a token. A Hindu" (Sidhwa 101).

Lenny's Hindu ayah walks her about the city because it is extremely difficult for Lenny to move about on her own. The way people interacted with the public aspects that surrounded her microcosmic, distinct world—the British troops, the Indian parades, Queen Victoria's statue, the distinguished authority of Gandhi, Nehru, and Jinnah—are some of the things that capture Lenny's attention and pique her interest at the beginning of the story. Her story therefore incorporates the societal and private lives that are pulsating around her.

Sidhwa's decision to provide Lenny with a variety of resources enables her to both see and describe the horrific horrors of the Partition. Lenny comes prepared to face both the personal and historical spheres. "I imagine lurking behind the wall. I know it is dumb because I have listened to its silence, my ear to the wall" (15).

From her domestic environment, Lenny advances to investigate the external world. Lenny is not bowed down by her physical abnormality. Lenny's attempt at

concealing her malformation additionally serves as a tool of empowerment to represent how daily life proceeds in its unique ways amidst widespread political disputes throughout the partition. Lenny enjoys the ways in which polio both helps and hinders her experiences in her extended family and social circle. The novel gives Lenny's malformed body agency.

As Ayah moves away to live with her family and the Ice-Candy-Man disappears over the Wagah border, the world outside of Lenny's narrative is completely changed and rife with regret. The young protagonist, the storyteller, gives up the thread of her tale while simultaneously forcing the listener to accept that the story can no longer be understood from a child's point of view. Because of this sudden awakening, Lenny appears to have been the victim of a violent and horrible act, just like any other victim in the novel.

> The innocence that my parents' vigilance, the servants' care and Godmother's love sheltered in me, that neither cousin's carnal cravings, nor the stories of the violence of the mobs, could quite destroy, was laid waste that evening by the emotional storm that raged round me. (Sidhwa 252).

This development is similar to that of her childhood friend Ranna, who also faces a sudden entry into adult experiences in his life. Ranna's function as narrator is highlighted when Lenny meets him later in the story and learns his horrifying survival story. Through Lenny's narrative perspective, one can observe how the crimes of adults affect the once-innocent existence of children.

She ultimately loses her innocence and becomes confused after witnessing horrifying incidents. Lenny does her best to understand and adapt to her quickly

changing environment when she finds herself in a dangerous predicament. Lenny's age makes her incapable to comprehend the verbal descriptions of the Partition, as seen by her quick assumption that the announcement that India would be partitioned is literal. Lenny genuinely believes that India would collapse completely. Lenny drops a plate on the floor, breaking and shattering it, and she assumes that India will follow suit.

Partition alters the trajectory of Lenny's and Ranna's life. They cannot go back to their previous lives after such horrific experiences. Their innocence is stolen from them and they will always be reminded of it since Partition forced them to mature far earlier than was appropriate. Children who endure on a physical or psychic level generally experience trauma, bewilderment and a loss of identity.

Lenny's love for Shanta and her unwitting role in betraying her are the main causes of her remorse. One of the worst experiences of Lenny's life occurs when a mob shows up at her house with the goal of "cleansing" it of Hindus. The Ice-Candy-Man bows down before a naive Lenny, who believes him when he says he will "protect Ayah with [his] life" (Sidhwa 182). This leads Lenny to be persuaded to divulge Shanta's location, which permits the kidnapping and brutal subjugation of the young woman who had long ruled over a heterogeneous group of men admirers.

It is Lenny's act of believing Ice-Candy-Man and telling him the truth that causes chaos in Ayah's life. Sharbat Khan portrays the episode thus "Children are the Devil…They only know the truth" (204).The narrative then describes the horrific experiences Shanta had, such as her kidnapping and gang rape led by the Ice-Candy-Man. Ayah's inner struggle is exacerbated by the complexity of her connection with

the Ice-Candy-Man, who becomes her pimp and spouse. Lenny takes part in the disclosure of the twisted relationship while watching her Godmother question the Ice-Candy-Man. Ayah has contradictory feelings as a result of the Ice-Candy-Man's fascination with her, which causes a "suffocating explosion" in her mind and eyes (Sidhwa 251).

But Ice-Candy-Man's actions and her Godmother's reaction to them generate Lenny's biggest and worst learning experience. She says:

> The confrontation between Ice-Candy-Man and Godmother opened my eyes to the wisdom of righteous indignation over compassion. To the demands of gratification – and the unscrupulous nature of desire. To the pitiless face of love. (252)

Lenny's feelings become more nuanced when it becomes clear that the Ice-Candy-Man is obsessed, as she struggles to understand the lasting effects of the horrific events on Ayah's life. This inner struggle mirrors the intricate network of remorse, compassion and wrath that Lenny encounters while figuring out what to do with Ayah's terrible tale: "Take a deep breath! Come on, inhale!" (251).

When Lenny's mother and aunt fail to disclose to the children that they are illegally hoarding petrol to assist vulnerable families to leave Lahore or to allow abused women to reunite with their people, Lenny feels that they are "setting fire to Lahore" and that they could be arrested (173).

A noteworthy motif within the novel is Lenny's remorse for betraying her dearest Ayah. The religious riots that followed the partition turned Ayah,

into a target of violence. A turning point in Lenny's life is Ice-Candy-Man's betrayal of Ayah. Lenny is deeply troubled by her witnessing Ayah's horrible situation. The tragic events that transpire are attributed to her failure to protect Ayah. Having a close relationship with Ayah makes Lenny feel even more guilty. Since Lenny and Ayah are shown to have a loving and trusting relationship, Lenny is devastated by the betrayal even more.

Throughout the novel, Lenny's guilt takes on different forms. She feels regrettable and powerless since she was unable to save Ayah. Lenny's guilt affects her relationships with other people in addition to her emotional well-being. She struggles to trust people and grows distant from Ice-Candy-Man out of fear that they he will betray her in the same way that he betrayed Ayah. Neither does Lenny develop a close attachment with her new ayah, Hamida. Lenny becomes isolated in her inner turmoil as her guilt acts as a wall separating her from the outside world.

Lenny is traumatised by Ayah's abduction and masseur's death. In the wake of Lenny's

> guilt-driven and flagellating grief and pinning for Ayah, the drums sound melancholy, and the preparations for the wedding are joyless. I[Lenny] have stood in front of the bathroom mirror for three days, examining my mouth. I try to wrench out the disgusting, truth- infected item while holding it between my fingers, but it chokes me. (Sidhwa 184)

After seeing her favorite masseur die and her ayah being kidnapped, Lenny is deeply affected by trauma. A victim may be motivated to take actions to mitigate the physical and psychological harm he/she has suffered as a result of the death or

disappearance of a family member or other close relative since a traumatic event and its undeniable aftereffects are intimately intertwined. Lenny struggles to handle the unexpected and astounding happenings in her life. Lenny becomes frustrated and tries to or at least considers injuring herself. In *The Four Fundamental Concepts of Psychoanalysis* Jacques Lacan states that after experiencing or witnessing a traumatic event, a subject's consciousness degrades and "there, the unity of the psyche, of the alleged totalizing, synthesizing psyche,… perishes" (51).

Thoughts about Ayah, Ranna and burning bodies continue to haunt Lenny. It brings up upsetting memories of her parents, the zoo lion and Papoo. Lenny is so traumatised by her experience that she struggles to fall or remain asleep. Lenny describes how the wounded and dead children mentally taunt her: "The twenty- foot-high ceiling recedes and the weak light that blurs the ventilators creeps in, adopting the angry shapes of swirling phantom babies, of gaping wounds creating malformed crescents..." (Sidhwa 212).

When Lenny learns that Ayah is forcibly turned into a dancer and a prostitute in the Hira Mandi of Lahore, she is definitely unsteady and her head spins. When she finds out that Ice-Candy Man, Imam Din, wrestlers, cooks, knife-sharpeners, peddlers, merchants, coolies and all are sexually abusing Ayah, she becomes even more disturbed. By adding, "That night I take all I've heard, learned, and been shown to bed…" Lenny describes her psychic situation (241). She continues "By dawn I reel dizzily on a fleeting glimpsed and horrible grown-up world"(241). Lenny's guilt and her exposure to violence result in consequences like suffocation, panic attacks, pain, hysteria, submissiveness and development of an inferiority complex. Lenny is tormented by nightmares and often finds herself lost in fantasies.

The recurring motif of the lion at the zoo represents Lenny's fear of violence and upheaval surrounding the Partition of India. Throughout the novel, Lenny is terrified of the lion, describing it as an insistent roar that will track her down and eat her in her bed. The lion symbolises the primal, uncontrollable forces of nationalism and religious conflict that are tearing apart the country. Lenny's fear of the lion reflects her own vulnerability as a child caught in the midst of the Partition violence. The lion thus becomes a metaphor for the larger threats that loom over Lenny and her community. At the same time, Lenny is drawn to the lion, fascinated by its power and ferocity. This duality mirrors the complex emotions Lenny experiences towards the Partition—a mixture of terror and morbid curiosity. The lion symbolises the destructive forces that Lenny cannot fully comprehend as a child, but which she is compelled to grapple with. Ultimately, the lion represents the trauma and transgression of Lenny's childhood, as the Partition shatters the innocence and security of her world. Lenny's fear and fascination with the lion encapsulate the disorienting experience of a child thrust into the chaos of adult violence and upheaval.

Trauma appears as a potent catalyst in Bapsi Sidhwa's *Cracking India* leading people to reassess their identities and gender roles against the turbulent backdrop of the Indian Partition. The narrative interweaves the greater backdrop of political and social change with the intimate problems of people. In addition to being a literary technique, trauma is a transforming force that forces characters to confront the existing equation of gender relations and personal identities and to question societal norms.

The widespread pain that characters endure in the wake of the Partition challenges preconceived notions about gender. In a patriarchal culture, the protagonist of the novel, Lenny, struggles to define herself. Lenny's perception of herself and womanhood is transformed as a result of the trauma of relocation and abuse, which allows her to question conventional gender beliefs. The identity of Ayah, is drastically altered by severe trauma. She is forced to re-evaluate her place in society as a result of the sexual abuse she receives at the hands of the Ice-Candy Man, as well as the tensions caused by the Partition over culture and religion. Through Ayah's story, the interconnectedness of trauma and gender is revealed, highlighting the complex ways that individual and societal upheavals affect the lives of women.

The kidnapping and rape of Ayah are examples of historical acts of violence against thousands of women, committed after the women were dehumanised as distinct individuals and culturally represented as Hindu or Muslim. Characters re-evaluate their identities in ways that go beyond accepted social norms as a result of trauma. Because of the upheaval caused by Partition, people are forced to consider their sense of identity and belonging. Lenny's traumatised coming-of-age journey results in a complex sense of her identity that goes beyond her disabilities and conformity to social norms. "I reel dizzily on a fleetingly glimpsed and terribly grown-up world" (Sidhwa 241). One of the most important incidents that sheds light on Lenny's subliminal suffering is the limb-by-limb mutilation of her "bloated celluloid doll" an act that denotes imitation of violence (138). The mutilation of the dolls represents Lenny's attempt to understand and process the violence and trauma of Partition. The doll symbolises innocence, which is being destroyed by the anarchy and

brutality around Lenny. However, when Lenny actually sees the doll torn apart, she is disgusted and overwhelmed by the violence, just as the real-life mutilation and destruction happening in Lahore disturbs and distresses her.

Because of the horrific events of the Partition, the female characters in the novel—Ayah and Lenny in particular—experience various types of traumas. When her Hindu cultural identity is exposed during the riots, Ayah, who was formerly admired for her eclectic identity, experiences a horrific metamorphosis. Her identity is fundamentally re-evaluated in light of the sexual and psychological abuse she endures. Traumatic experiences like Ayah's kidnapping and abuse add to the loss of innocence in characters like Lenny. She is forced to face the harsh reality of life after seeing the atrocities of the division. The pain of the division is entwined with Lenny's coming-of-age journey, causing her to reassess who she is and struggle with the effect that community violence has on her sense of self.

Trauma serves as a trigger for the characters to reconsider their religious and cultural identities. They are compelled by the divide to face the difficulties of belonging to several religious and cultural groupings. The horrors of the division cast doubt on pre-existing ideas about identity, causing internal strife and a need for purpose amid disarray. Trauma reveals societal power structures, especially those related to gender. Even though they are victims, female characters show resilience and resistance. Ayah's reaction to the pain she experiences takes the shape of resistance, questioning the status quo and prompting a reconsideration of women's duties in the face of hardship. The characters' shared trauma serves as a reflection of the wider

social effects of division. In the wake of such tragic occurrences, the story acts as a mirror for society, encouraging a re-evaluation of cultural, gender and identity standards.

The traumatising injuries that characters sustain become a source of metamorphosis as they navigate the turbulent terrain of the Partition. Using trauma as a prism through which to see the nuances of the human experience, the novel provides an account of how individual and communal upheavals may reshape gender dynamics and individual identities.

Sidhwa's Storytelling Approach to Historical Trauma

Bapsi Sidhwa uses a distinctive narrative technique in *Cracking India* to illustrate the historical pain of the Partition of 1947. Sidhwa forces readers to interact with marginalised characters, especially women and offers a deeper understanding of the atrocities they endured throughout this era.

In addition to illustrating the historical suffering, the novel's narrative format helps readers identify with the marginalised characters. Through Sidhwa's narrative, readers can empathise with these marginalised people, leading to a deeper comprehension of the effects of division on their lives. Sidhwa provides insights into the troubled present and history of the subcontinent by bringing historical sorrow to life through her exquisite prose and deft structuring.

The narrative technique employed by Bapsi Sidhwa in *Cracking India* is an effective way to examine and comprehend the historical pain of the division of the subcontinent. Sidhwa forces readers to connect with the experiences of marginalised

people, especially women, by focusing the story on them and by bringing attention to the brutality they faced during this turbulent period. Lenny, a young narrator, is one feature of Sidhwa's narrative technique that she uses to describe the events of the partition. Readers can see the pain through the eyes of a little girl, which offer a unique viewpoint on the events that take place. This narrative decision emphasises the fragility of the characters and the terrible consequences of the partition while enabling a deeper, more intimate connection to the experiences of the event.

Additionally, Sidhwa uses colourful and expressive language to illustrate the atrocities of the division. She creates a realistic image of the turmoil, violence and devastation that enveloped the area at that time with her descriptive language. Readers are made to feel uneasy and uncomfortable by the violent imagery, which powerfully reflects the mental and physical anguish of the characters. Moreover, Sidhwa's use of multiple points of view add to a more thorough comprehension of the historical pain. People from a wide range of religious and ethnic backgrounds appear in the novel's ensemble of characters, and each character has his/her own distinct experiences and viewpoints. Sidhwa illustrates the complex depth of the trauma by examining the division through the perspectives of several characters.

Cracking India is categorised as a literary eye-witness narrative that draws on several autobiographical elements. Sidhwa's function as a woman is to lucidly portray the historical perspective of women during the division (Kleist 79). Sidhwa's examination of the role of women during the partition is a noteworthy feature of her narrative technique. She provides a voice to the challenges and experiences of women who endured bereavement, displacement and sexual assault during this time. Sidhwa illustrates the fragility and resilience of women amid such tragic circumstances

through the figure of Ayah. Traditional accounts of the history of the division, which frequently ignore the experiences of women are challenged by this presentation. Sidhwa skilfully combines surrealistic and fantastical aspects with the story to create a fresh and inventive depiction of the divide. By emphasising the psychological and emotional effects of the tragedy, this mix of truth and imagination allows readers to delve into the inner lives and coping mechanisms of the characters.

Partition's historical agony is eloquently conveyed in *Cracking India*. Sidhwa depicts the intricacy and destruction of this horrific incident by utilising a child narrator, using evocative language and employing multiple points of view. Sidhwa enhances the depth and importance of the novel by encouraging readers to connect with the historical pain on a personal and sympathetic level through the use of certain storytelling devices.

Readers see the effects of partition on people and communities thanks to Lenny's observational and innocent point of view. Sidhwa also uses Ranna as a narrator. By using this strategy, the story becomes more complicated and nuanced, enabling readers to interact with a variety of feelings and viewpoints.

The narrative structure of the novel is nonlinear. The plot jumps about in time, documenting various moments and occurrences, as opposed to unfolding linearly. By highlighting the unsettling consequences of division, this method mimics the fractured nature of trauma and memory. The tale interweaves personal accounts, political developments and cultural dynamics, making the nonlinear structure conducive to the narrative.

The use of metaphor and symbolism in Sidhwa's stories is another feature of her writing. Larger historical and social truths are frequently represented by the novel's characters and events. For instance, *Cracking India* represents the disputes over religion and politics that occur during division.Sidhwa examines the complexities and ambiguities of identity, loyalty and treachery through Lenny's persona. Lenny's persona also represents the innocence that was lost during this turbulent period in Indian history.

In addition, Sidhwa gives the story touches of magical realism. The combination of imagination and reality in magical realism enables the writer to create a bizarre and dreamy ambience. Through this method, Sidhwa examines the conflicts that occur between cultures and religions, as well as the psychological consequences of Partition. In addition to allowing for creative and lyrical descriptions that enhance the story and appeal to the reader's senses, magical realism also allows for the use of vivid language.

The novel also makes use of rich and expressive images to provide a feeling of location and ambience. The novel comes to life on the page because of Sidhwa's depiction of Lahore, the city in which the story unfolds. The reader is transported to the metropolis as Sidhwa expertly describes the city's vivid colours, sounds and scents. By adding dimension to the story and improving the reader's sensory experience, this strategy makes the historical events seem more real and accessible.

Sidhwa places a greater emphasis of the techniques of storytelling rather than the story itself and this augment's the overall effect of the narrative. The most crucial of all is the present-tense, first-person narrative. The child's carefree disposition makes the carnage all around her tragic.

The repressed feelings of the underprivileged minorities in any society are frequently given a voice through art. Bapsi Sidhwa uses eight-year-old Lenny as the narrator of her novel to highlight the fear that the disadvantaged sections experienced during India's partition. The main character of the novel, Lenny, is marginalised not just as a little child but also as a woman, a Parsee and a physically disabled child. This makes her a very potent and moving storyteller.

Post-modern storytelling tactics include utilising a collage structure to describe the story and merging two or more narrative voices. Sidhwa while keeping Ranna's story distinct, and merging several temporal zones into a single present, exercises conceptual freedom. This enables her to examine a certain event, character, or topic from multiple viewpoints.

Lenny's introduction to the adult world, which is characterised by a very different and dissimilar cultural atmosphere, is captured in the story with remarkable delicacy and understanding. Within the broader theme of Lenny's development and acquisition of a certain level of comprehension of human situations, the novel's episodic structure depicts the political and ideological aspirations, anxiety, pain, stupidity, suffering and joy that characterised the Partition era in Lahore. The adept yet delicate handling of the past by the female child—its scarred geography, its painful history—raises questions regarding the veracity of projecting the child's point of view. Sidhwa's narrative strategies in the novel enhance the multidimensional aspect of the story and piques the interest of the readers both intellectually and emotionally.

In *Cracking India* Bapsi Sidhwa uses the metaphor of "cracking" to portray

the horrific events that occurred during the Lahore uprising of 1947. Lenny acts as a synecdoche for the complicated realities that young people of her day have to deal with. The story develops as trauma fiction, negotiating the dilemma of presenting overpowering events that are difficult to depict. This investigation explores the symbolic and metaphorical elements that Sidhwa uses to explain the significant effects of trauma on people as well as society.

Lenny uses her protective side as a shield and her human adaptability as a survival tactic. In addition to fictionalising the tragedy of an adult world, Sidhwa's careful layering of the text to position a youngster affected by catastrophic occurrences lends believability to her novel. A child serves as the novel's functional mouthpiece. The fictionalised worlds of literary works enable complex encounters with the trauma. Thus, literary responses to trauma can elicit from readers both critical thought and emotional identification and sympathy (Schönfelder 29).

As Lenny struggles to make sense of the atrocities happening all around her, the novel explores the intricate relationships between truth, identity and social conflict. Choosing a character like Lenny as the narrator not only enables the representation of childlike innocence, but also offers the reader a distinctive viewpoint to navigate the turbulent events of the partition. Through her narrative voice, Lenny, provides an honest and genuine depiction of how events in history affect a person’s perception of reality. The investigation of Lenny's inner turmoil and self-deprecating questions prepares the reader for a deep dive into the significance of seeing historical suffering through a child's eyes.

Cracking India is a gripping examination of past suffering, shown through

Lenny's perspective. Lenny's narrative voice serves as a vehicle for comprehending the complex effects of community violence on individual and societal identities. Lenny is the narrator and Sidhwa deliberately chooses Lenny to offer the readers a close look at truth, innocence and cracks in both people's lives and the larger societal context. Through Lenny's voyage, the novel is transformed into a moving meditation on the lingering effects of the division, providing readers with a sophisticated comprehension of the complex relationship between individual memories and the imagined reconstruction of a shared history.

The Role of Multicultural Perspectives in Trauma Narratives

The presentation of trauma in *Cracking India* draws heavily on multicultural viewpoints. By employing narrative strategies like multiple viewpoints and shifting time frames, the writer positions the reader as an observer of gendered postcolonial trauma that impacts women. Utilising concepts from genetics, psychology and neuroscience, this study investigates trauma within the multi-ethnic setting of India. This study delves into the novel's treatment of violence in communities through the lens of feminist theory.

The novel employs several literary strategies to draw the reader into the horrific encounters of its protagonists, many of whom are women. By employing multiple perspectives, the writer facilitates the reader's ability to examine the novel's events from several angles, leading to a more profound comprehension of the effects of trauma on both people and societies. The story's manipulation of time reflects how shattering painful memories are, giving a sense of confusion and bewilderment.

Sidhwa employs Dori Laub's technique of trauma interview to reveal the painful experiences of characters, especially the women. By employing these literary devices, the novel highlights the effects of trauma on marginalised people and invites readers to critically examine societal and cultural viewpoints on the subject. Finally, *Cracking India* provides readers with an in-depth examination of the human experience during historical upheaval, demonstrating the need for multicultural viewpoints in resolving trauma in the Indian context.

The child-narrator Lenny records the incidents of riots between Hindus, Sikhs and Muslims. Her Parsee identity, her innocence and her disability make her narration unadulterated and most objective. As Ralph Crane reviews the novel, he highlights the significance of the child narrator. He writes:

> The atrocities of 1947 are best seen through the innocent naïve eyes of a child, who has no Hindu, Muslim or Sikh axe to grind…. Lenny is free from the prejudices of religion, the prejudices against women, and the constraints she will be subject to as she grows older. The authorial voice is a powerful voice of hindsight (86).

Lenny sees the tragedy uniquely and intimately since she witnesses the Partition firsthand. Lenny's naivety and innocence influence how she views trauma as she is unable to completely appreciate the scope and complexity of the political choices and acts of communal violence that resulted in the Partition. Entire communities went through severe violence, relocation and loss during the communal tragedy of the Partition. The outcome of political and religious tensions grew into a major conflict. Lenny's experience of trauma is confined to her local

environment and the people she comes into contact with, but millions of people in the Indian subcontinent were impacted by communal trauma during Partition. Lenny's trauma offers an intimate look at the tragic events, serving as a microcosm of the greater communal anguish experienced during the Partition.

Lenny's innocence and naiveté have moulded her understanding of the communal and personal anguish she experiences during the Partition, providing a unique perspective on the events that were taking place. Sidhwa employs literary devices like symbolism and metaphor in her narrative to portray the terrible experiences of the characters. Because Lenny the narrator is a witness to historical tragedy, readers are able to comprehend better Partition's long-lasting impacts and how intricately it interacts with societial and individual experiences.

Cracking India offers a thorough examination of childhood trauma within the historical context of India's Partition, providing insights into the psychological and material repercussions on people as well as communities. The reader obtains a distinctive comprehension of the ramifications of both collective and individual trauma through Lenny's point of view. The novel's multicultural viewpoints—especially how Hindu, Muslim and Sikh perspectives are portrayed—help readers gain a deeper understanding of how trauma affects a diverse culture.

Chapter 5

Beasts of No Nation: The Brutality of Child Soldiering

This chapter undertakes an investigation into the moral and psychological ramifications of child soldiering as narrated in the novel *Beasts of No Nation* by Uzodinma Iweala. Set against the backdrop of West African civil wars, Iweala's novel transports readers to the horrific realm of child soldiering and the trauma it brings on the child soldiers. Iweala delivers a scathing critique of the crimes committed against defenceless children in the name of war. The novel is recounted through the perspective of Agu, a young boy who is sadly thrown into the violent realities of armed warfare.

One of the most heinous abuses of human rights in modern wars is the practice of child soldiering, which has terrible effects on both the victims and society at large. Iweala exposes readers to the terrible reality of children being coerced into becoming weapons of mass devastation and having their innocence stolen in the middle of conflict, all against the backdrop of civil conflicts in West Africa.

The protagonist of *Beasts of No Nation* is a young boy named Agu who is thrown into a terrifying world of abuse and exploitation. Readers are given a vivid and brutal account of the psychological effects of war on young soldiers as well as the moral dilemmas they must resolve in the face of unimaginable tragedies, through Agu's eyes. This chapter examines how Iweala handles the complexity of child soldiering and its lasting effects on people's mental health. It also reveals the underlying truths that underpin Iweala's examination of war, pain and the human

spirit's resilience through a detailed examination of Agu's path from innocence to violence.

The novel tells the story of Agu, a young boy living in an unnamed West African country torn apart by civil war. When the conflict reaches his village, Agu's family is torn apart and he is forced to flee into the jungle. There, he is discovered by a group of rebel soldiers led by the charismatic but ruthless Commandant, who recruits Agu into his unit and indoctrinates him into becoming a child soldier. Over the course of the novel, Agu is forced to commit horrific acts of violence and witnesses the brutality of war firsthand. Despite the trauma he endures, the novel ends on a note of hope, as Agu is taken to a rehabilitation facility where he begins to heal and envision a future for himself.

The psychological and moral development of child soldiers as they are thrown into a violent and chaotic environment is one of the main themes of *Beasts of No Nation*. Readers are given a complex picture of how armed combat alters people's identities and moral compass as Agu struggles with the agony of war and the loss of innocence. Iweala skilfully handles the intricacies of Agu's psychological ordeal, urging readers to address the moral conundrums raised by the abuse of children during armed conflict. In addition, *Beasts of No Nation* delivers a biting indictment of the social causes that support the cycle of exploitation and bloodshed in areas plagued by conflict. Iweala emphasises how political instability, poverty and power relations affect the recruitment and use of child soldiers through Agu's interactions with the Commandant and his fellow soldiers. By doing this, Iweala calls on readers to address

the systemic inequalities that give rise to the problem of child soldiering and to acknowledge that it is one's common duty to care for and defend the most defenceless members of society.

Contextual Background: African Civil Wars

Historical, social, and economic forces interact in a complicated way to give rise to violence in West Africa. The area has had a turbulent past characterised by resource exploitation and colonisation. The enduring effects of colonial authority, characterised by arbitrary partitions imposed by European powers, established the foundation for power struggles and ethnic tensions that proliferated over the latter half of the 20th century.

The conflict in Uzodinma Iweala's story is around resource exploitation and political instability. Although the nation is not mentioned in the novel specifically, the portrayal is consistent with the wider West African history of internal conflict and civil wars. Valuable resource extraction and trading, including minerals, oil and diamonds, has frequently served as a trigger for violent conflicts between rival factions vying for power and financial gain. In addition, a string of unscrupulous governments, military takeovers and poor economic management marked West Africa's post-colonial history, aggravating socioeconomic inequality and dissatisfaction among various ethnic groups. Armed rebel organisations flourished as a result of this unstable political environment; some of these groups enlisted minors like Agu against their will.

Many authors who have dedicated their creative artistry to war have shaped their works into "... a compass for social re-direction" (Nwahunanya 14). Homo sapiens regard themselves to be the most advanced species in the cosmos, however

they are always engaged in conflicts with each other (Poster 60). An expanding body of literature describes the horrific experience of war in Africa and provides insightful accounts of the problems that people suffer on a personal and societal level — the widespread use of child soldiers to fight battles and war as a postcolonial African ailment. Complex biological, psychological, social and political factors influence war, which is a uniquely human evil (Osiki et al., 142).

The history of violence in Africa and its effects on children participating in battles, both psychologically and behaviourally, are covered in *Beasts of No Nation*. The effects of war and hostilities extend beyond the experiences of a single soldier on the front lines of battle. Accordingly, the idea of a difficult or "adulterated" upbringing in the impacted areas is intended to be addressed through the stories of child soldiers (Mastey, "Adulterated Children" 39). Child soldiers were used during the 1967–1970 Nigerian Civil War, often known as the Biafran War (Stremlau 288). Some of the circumstances that a child soldier operates under are eloquently described by Catarina Martins. She notes that children engaged in armed conflict regularly die or suffer serious injuries. They are made to do dangerous tasks like setting off bombs or mines in addition to using guns. Most of the time, child soldiers are made to live in appalling conditions, with little or no access to healthcare and food. They are usually mistreated, beaten and made to feel ashamed of themselves. Errors and desertion are frequently met with harsh penalties. Along with being active in battle and undertaking other duties, female soldiers are especially vulnerable to sexual harassment, abuse, and rape (Martins 652).

Through her research, Catarina Martins has shown that, since the late 1990s, the issue of children's involvement in combat has garnered the concern of academics and other observers worldwide due to its humanitarian implications. She has also shown that the proliferation of narratives about child soldiers may be motivated by both humanitarian and international goals. (Martins 650-671)

Munro cites Eleni Coundouriotis, who contends that the story of the child soldier "dehistoricizes the politically lively and locally relevant African war novel to cater to the Western markets that have come to dominate African publishing"(125). Additionally, he refers to Maureen Moynagh's contention that the child soldier's image is "designed to encourage the "sympathetic involvement" of the viewer." (Munro 126).

The *Beasts of No Nation* examines how these socio-political and historical elements come together, to draw the protagonist into a harsh world deeply ingrained in strife. The way the complicated history of West Africa is shown serves as a sobre reminder of the larger social problems that encourage the recruitment of child soldiers and the continuation of conflict in the area. The socio-political elements that contribute to child soldiering, specifically the disintegration of social norms, the deterioration of moral principles and the deliberate manipulation of helpless children by military officials seeking political gain during an armed conflict is presented in the novel.

Using children as weapons in civil wars is among the most upsetting and morally repugnant aspects of warfare. This phenomenon emphasises the atrocious exploitation of innocence amid the chaos and violence of conflicts. Children in war-torn areas are frequently forced into tasks that they are ill-suited to understand, let

alone carry out. A volatile atmosphere has been produced by long-standing historical grudges and the quest for control over resources entwined with ethnic and regional identities. The civilian population is most severely affected by these wars, particularly young people like Agu who are thrown into the horrors of war with little comprehension of the intricate dynamics at work.

Civil wars are typified by power struggles and factional rivalries and it is common to see children being used as bargaining chips. There are several explanations for this ignoble practice. The most important of all is children are thought to be more pliable and easier to brainwash, which makes them vulnerable to the beliefs spread by rival groups. Their tender minds thus serve as fertile grounds to spread hatred and to incite acts of violence.

The world of Agu is a moving microcosm that depicts the greater difficulties faced by war-torn areas in West Africa. Agu's story is painstakingly crafted by Uzodinma Iweala to reveal not just one person's terrifying journey but also to serve as a mirror reflecting the anguish and upheaval endured by communities devastated by civil conflicts. The author deftly integrates Agu's journey into the larger fabric of regional social, political and economic turmoil.

The devastation caused by civil war is pervasive throughout Agu's globe. Every stride Agu takes is a testament to the breakdown of social systems, the uprooting of families and the deterioration of cultural standards. The vibrant neighbourhood that once flourished has been replaced by the menacing sounds of gunfire and the shadows of violence and it now lies in ruins. Agu's initiation to the world of child soldiering serves as a metaphor for the more significant challenges

encountered by innumerable children entangled in the web of political aspirations and ethnic conflicts.

Agu's journey from a joyful, imaginative youngster to a traumatised child soldier illustrates the tremendous effects of conflict on a person's sense of self. His internal difficulties are metaphorically represented by Iweala's striking portrayal of his inner agony, which communities face while navigating the upheaval of civil unrest. The loss of innocence and the harsh introduction into a violent world serve as metaphors for the larger social disintegration, in which the basic foundation of mankind is destroyed.

Furthermore, Agus's interactions with other child soldiers, each bearing their burden of sorrow and loss, highlight the overall anguish of a generation deprived of its formative years. The underlying understanding and the brotherhood among these young fighters, developed through shared pain, serve as a monument to the human spirit's resilience even in the most hopeless situations. Agu's world represents many of the common challenges which societies dealing with the aftermath of civil conflicts encounter.

To understand the connection between individual and community experiences in areas rife with war, the novel asks readers to empathise with Agu's reality. Iweala persuades readers to consider the terrible effects of war on the fabric of communities by deftly using Agu's story to highlight larger social issues. Agu becomes a representation of the human spirit's tenacity in the face of unfathomable tragedy, standing for perseverance in the face of despair.

Childhood Trauma in the Midst of War: Agu's Story

Cathy Caruth's most poignant query in *Unclaimed Experience*: "Is trauma the encounter with death or the ongoing experience of having survived it?" becomes pertinent in this context of Agu's life (7). Agu is a moving example of a young person used as a pawn in the broader scheme of a civil war. His transformation from a joyful toddler to a seasoned soldier captures the heart breaking truth that many youngsters in comparable circumstances must confront. Children who have been uprooted from their homes or orphaned by violence are typically the easiest targets for armed organisations to recruit. Many youngsters are forced to join these organisations without realising the horrible life that awaits them, for they are attracted by offers of food, shelter and a sense of belonging. Agu is constantly threatened and coerced by the Commandant: "He is grabbing my neck and whispering into my ear, kill him now because I am not having the time oh. If you are not killing him, enh. Luftenant (sic.) will be thinking you are spy. And who can know if he won't just be killing you"(Iweala 25).

As the Commandant uses coercive techniques to take advantage of Agu's fragility and dread of the Luftenant(sic), it is evident that Agu is suffering from internal anguish. The Commandant's physical and psychological coercion emphasises the emotional abuse and manipulation that Agu has endured. The Commandant's use of force, shown by his grasping of Agu's neck, illustrates the brutal treatment meted out to child soldiers. Agu is used as a pawn by those in positions of power who take advantage of his vulnerabilities and worries.

The Commandant's hushed warnings highlight the psychological torture that Agu is subject to. For Agu, the possibility of being called a spy and the ensuing fallout from such an allegation creates a paralysing atmosphere. An already upsetting scenario is made even more traumatising by the mere prospect of having to deal with more aggression from the Luftenant(sic.). This section of Agu's story is a moving illustration of the severe psychological damage that conflict does to young people. Agu's internal trauma stems from coercion, manipulation and the deterioration of a child's feeling of safety and autonomy in addition to exposure to physical violence. The tragic meeting point of a child's innocence with the brutal reality of armed conflict is perfectly captured in Agu's narrative. This interaction captures the dilemma that Agu faces as a helpless victim at the hands of Mbembe'' war machine-state operators. The Commandant and the Luftenant (sic), who have authority over Agu's life, are the representatives of operators in this case. When the narrator is given the horrifying choice to murder or to be killed, the chaotic pattern of his inner monologue gets more intense:

> I am starting to crying and I am starting to shaking. And in my head I am shouting NO! NO! NO! But my mouth is not moving and I am not saying anything. And I am thinking if I am killing killing then I am going to hell so I am smelling fire and smoke. (Iweala 23)

The use of emotional words like "crying". "shaking" and "killing" repeatedly highlights specific emotions and highlights the trauma connected to the experience of being a child soldier. After Agu commits his first murder, his "proto-conscience" attempts to reconcile his internal conflict between his moral convictions and the fact that he is helpless to stop the Commandant's oppressive authority. "So if I am killing

then I am only doing what is right. I am singing song to myself because I am hearing too many voice in my head telling me I am bad boy" (Iweala 29).

The pain of the narrator being compelled to carry out this deadly deed again is highlighted by confronting with a lot of repetition of "killing"(29). Agu believes his acts are intrinsically terrible, as evidenced by the "too many voice" in his brain telling him he is a "bad boy"(29). But for him to survive under the Commandant, these actions are necessary. The moral struggle that arises from being a child soldier, even in situations where it offers the best chance of survival in a necropolitical state, is highlighted by illustrating this unavoidable dilemma of the child soldier's position.

When Agu does violent acts, he ignores his feelings in favour of explaining what is occurring. When he hits a man for the first time, Agu witnesses just "his head is cracking and the blood is spilling out like milk from coconut" (Iweala 25). These strategies provide experiences of Agu's story that are both distant and involved at the same time. On the one hand, Agu's pain promotes reflection and empathy. However, the lack of psychological analysis lifts the viewer from an assumed omniscient position about what it is like to be a child soldier and denies them important insights.

A horrific example that Iweala portrays is the sexual assault that Agu experiences at the hands of the Commandant on several occasions. "Then he is beginning to touch me all over with his finger while he is breathing just even harder" (84). The emotional response is aroused. "I am not liking it when Commandant is wanting to see me, but I am having to go otherwise it will be making him to angry" (80).

Since the “Commandant is powerful more than me”, and if Agu speaks up, the Commandant “will be slapping me the way he is always slapping all the other soldier – until their bloody teeths is cutting his hand.” (Iweala 80, 89) The fact that Agu was raped by an adult who also happens to be his only source of "food or protection" highlights how vulnerable Agu is to becoming a victim of both sides of the conflict (83). One of the most dramatic parts of the novel is the one about Agu’s rape, which highlights how abandoned he feels as a victim and as a young soldier. Rape is an unquestionable reality in the life of a child soldier.

The novel depicts a world in which Agu finds solace, joy and amazement in the simple pleasures of youth. In his first world, the novel represents familiarity and comfort. Agu and his mother harbour a strong relationship, as seen by their interactions and their mutual enthusiasm for books. His early experiences are defined by this familial bond, which also highlights the supportive atmosphere that existed before the interruption.

> This was my favorite book because of how it is looking and because of all the story inside of it. Whenever my mother is touching it, I am shouting, that one, that one, and she is saying, shhh don’t be so loud or you will be waking your father. (25)

Agu’s peaceful time spent reading with his mother is about to end, signalling a sudden and significant shift in his circumstances. There seems to be a disruption coming when Agu’s mother quietly corrects him, telling him not to wake his father by being too noisy. This portends the impending turmoil brought on by disagreement, which will upend the tranquil family environment.

Conflict forces Agu to commit terrible acts as a young soldier, which is a dramatic contrast to the tenderness and simplicity of his early years. However, the absence of psychological reflection deprives the reader of information and lifts them out of the position of presumed omniscience regarding the experience of being a child soldier. “Until one day, I am running to my father and saying, look, and then taking my hand over my head and touching my ear. He is smiling and saying, okay, and then the next day we are going to the primary school” (Iweala 26).

Agu’s willingness to go to school, a moving sign of optimism and normalcy in his life, demonstrates his desire for knowledge. The conversation he has with his father about getting permission to go to school exudes warmth and a sense of family unity. Agu going to his father and tapping his ear to show that he is ready for school perfectly conveys the excitement and delight of that moment. As Agu’s optimistic quest for knowledge gives way to the harsh realities of war, the disruption caused by fighting becomes evident. Agu’s circumstances drastically change the next day, casting a cloud over the transient thrill of getting ready for school. Conflict's disruptive effects provide abruptness and unpredictability, which are shown in the difference between the early optimism and the ensuing voyage into the unknown. This pivotal event shows how Agu changes from a happy child with dreams of being a teacher to a hero thrown into the cruel and brutal world of war, laying the groundwork for his difficult journey as a child soldier.

Agu is forced to join the rebel organisation and take part in unspeakable acts of violence due to the anguish of seeing his father's death and his fear of punishment or rejection from his peers (89). For example, combat trauma may result in implicit

guilt over surviving an assault; it may also trigger memories of childhood abuse in which the victim longed for the murder of a sibling, among other things.

After seeing his father's brutal execution at the hands of rebel gunmen, he hides in a dark spot where dread cripples him and keeps him safe from terror. Sadly, he is found out by the rebels. They charge him with being a spy first. Agu says that he is not a spy, since he is aware of the predicament of spies. Then they ask him whether he would like to serve in the military. Agu claims that since the commandant may punish him harshly for declining to enrol, he has no choice but to serve in the military. Second, he would be noticed by the other young soldiers around, who would then report bad things about him to the commandant. He would also have nowhere to hide. Thirdly, like the other young soldiers in his vicinity, he aspires to be viewed as a courageous lad. He makes a great effort to suppress his tears since doing so would show weakness. Fourth, like the other lads, he wants the material and psychological perks of being a soldier, such as having a new military uniform and a place to live. Agu recalls that the commander again asked him: “Do you want to be soldier, he is asking me in soft voice” (Iweala 11).

Agu is the lone survivor after war kills his community. All that the fragile youngster can do is to go with the rebel group and adopt them as his family. Agu is somewhat comforted when the head of the rebel organisation swears to battle the enemies that killed his father. The truth that these very same individuals slaughtered his father and murdered the other males in his community, however, is unknown to young Agu. Agu is tricked into believing that he is engaged in gunfight combat with the people who shot his father. Consequently, he uses his victims as a channel for his rage. Agu and Strika encounter a woman and her daughter who were not lucky

enough to have been evacuated by the UN. While their captives are being tortured, Agu thinks back to his sister and Mama. He tells the story of how he fights off feelings of mercy and sympathy when they arise: “I am standing outside myself. I am grabbing this woman and her daughter. They are not my mother and my sister. I am telling them, it is enough. This is the end” (Iweala 60).

Agu becomes enraged when “Commandant is saying that she is enemy, she is stealing our food, and killing my family because she is enemy” (51).The outcome is instantaneous and catastrophic. Under the influence of gunpowder, Agu and Strika slaughter and maim with joy. They have an inner need that can only be satiated by blood flow. Agu acknowledges that he has mastered the technique of slicing open expectant mothers “... to be seeing who is a girl and who is a boy” (59).

Strika rapes a lady who may pass for his mother while under the influence of gunpowder: “Strika is pulling down his short and showing that he is man to this woman while I am holding her one leg and another soldier is holding the other. She is screaming”(60). The daughter of his victim then has her arm cruelly amputated by him. She died right away. After learning that the lady is the adversary who killed his father, Agu proceeds to mercilessly attack her body with his machete.

Agu and other people like him, who are thrown into the furnace of battle at a tender age, suffer terrible psychological consequences, as graphically illustrated in *Beasts of No Nation*. The trip that Agu takes, which is symbolised by the eerie dance of gunshots that killed his father, represents the deep and irrevocable change from a helpless youngster to a seasoned killer. The story illuminates the unexplored mental landscape that arises when someone witnesses a family tragedy, revealing the complex relationships between survival, wrath and the search for identity amid the

turmoil of armed combat. The study presents a graphic and unvarnished picture of the psychological warfare carried out on society's most defenceless citizens as the protagonists struggle with the moral abyss. The novel serves as a sobering reminder of the pressing need for empathy, comprehension and action to lessen the psychological toll taken by those who have encountered unspeakable tragedies in a war zone.

Psychological and Moral Implications of Child Soldiering

Child soldiering has significant ethical and psychological ramifications. It deals with minors who are enlisted in the military or utilised as props in combat, exposing them to severe physical harm and anguish. Agu and the other child soldiers are forced to leave their childhoods behind and enter a world of cruelty and violence, which makes the loss of innocence a major subject of the novel. While their recovery depends on their innocence being restored, their involvement may have left them with long-lasting stress and psychological injuries.

The moral ramifications of child soldiering are extremely concerning since Agu, a devout Christian, is forced to carry out horrible violent deeds at the Commandant’s instruction. His psychological conflict between the horrors of war and his moral compass mirrors the moral conundrums that many child soldiers encounter. The novel’s first-person narrative gives readers immediate access to Agu’s ideas, feelings and experiences and fosters empathy and understanding. Iweala delves deeper into the psychological effects of war by presenting Strika, a fellow child soldier, who is emotionally distant but nevertheless profoundly impacted by the atrocities he has seen.

Many of the child soldiers work to restore their relationships with their families and communities, heal from the psychological wounds inflicted by their

service, and resume some, if not all, of the activities they enjoyed as children before the war, such as attending school. This is theoretically possible because, even if their innocence has been taken away from them, certain parts of their upbringing have been "stolen," creating a space for healing (Sanders 216).

His Christian faith develops a moral compass in Agu. Sadly, this compass is powerless to divert him from the horrors suffocating him. He finds himself stuck even if he despises his circumstances. The youngster asks, "…how can I be running if I am not knowing the way to be taking me away from the war" (Iweala 134). Iweala depicts a defenceless infant begging for aid while marooned in a terrible environment. The Christian boy's comments are a confession and then they are placed in the priest's chair, with unfettered access to the darkest secrets of a child soldier: "It is not mattering who it is, just that they are dying. I am thinking thinking. I am thinking that I cannot be doing this anymore" (Iweala 135).

Iweala addresses directly to convey Agu's genuine remorse. The boy's humanity is revealed by his scruples and regret. His direct admission of his guilt puts him in the running for forgiveness. Iweala provides direct access to the boy's ideas, open experiences, and unadulterated emotions by narrating the story in the first person, removing any potential embellishments from the story. Consequently, Iweala deliberately puts the reader to experience Agu's ordeal, evoking the child soldier's suffering, rage, desire, desperation, and shame. The author shocks the reader by presenting the child soldier's psychological suffering uncompromisingly.

Iweala emphasises Juvenalian mockery by using the tragedy of Agu. The process of initiation of a youngster into the ranks of killers is the most emblematic of

these tragedies. Agu is forced to murder a human being for the first time by the Commandant, who explains to Agu that killing “is like falling in love” (Iweala 12). In a matter of minutes, Agu transforms from detesting murder to obtaining an erection and ruthlessly taking a life. Iweala has the reader witness the birth of a murderer and the death of a child. Iweala allows the reader to peep into Agu’s mind as the scared young soldier commits his first act of dehumanisation:”The enemy’s body is having deep red cut everywhere and his forehead is looking just crushed so his whole face is not even looking like face because his head is broken everywhere and there is just blood, blood, blood….” (21 – 22)

To mock society for turning a blind eye to these predators who wreak havoc on children's lives, Iweala graphically details the protagonist’s horrific victimisation at the hands of the Commandant. Agu has been trained by the Commandant to become unable to tell humans apart from other animals. “Now I am not knowing what is farmer and what is goat” Agu exclaims, "we are finding farmer and his goat on the road and we are killing him" (78). Iweala laments that children like Agu are deprived of their youth by the Commandant and the senseless conflict he represents. Agu is taken on a murderous rampage by the Commandant. Agu remarks “The bleeding is making people to be screaming and shouting all the time, shouting to father and to mother, shouting to God or to Devil… Sometimes I am wanting to cry very loud, but nobody is crying in this place” (117).

Agu’s companion in combat, Strika, is another degraded character in *Beasts of No Nation*. Throughout the whole novel, Strika is almost in shock at the misery the war has brought upon him and his family. As Agu makes an initial attempt to approach Strika, Iweala draws attention to his psychological problems:

> So I am asking him…are you Strika, and he is nodding yes. Are you having parent, and he is shaking his head no. Are you liking plantain? Nodding yes. Fish? Yes. Pear? Yes. Are you stupid? No. Why are you not talking talking? No answer. (Iweala13)

The idea of childhood innocence is fragile; it is frequently portrayed as a state of innocence and purity, unaffected by the harsh realities of the outside world. But in stories of child soldiers, this innocence is broken, caught in the violence of war

The idea of childhood during the Romantic era was a "retrospective phenomenon" (Austin 76). The stories describing childhood purity do not prosaically depict innocence as an abstract idea or as a clearly expressed quality of a character (Shklovsky 166). A number of African authors have written about childhood and most of these narratives have African protagonists and are situated in war-torn regions of the continent. However, the Western publishing industry produces them primarily for Western readers, who must understand them using Western conceptual frameworks such as childhood innocence (Mastey, "Child Soldiers and their Innocence" 146). In this view, infants represent prelapsarian ignorance; lacking moral development, they are consequently temporarily incapable of acting in a good or bad manner. Scriptures, for instance, claim that young people "[have] no knowledge of good or evil" (152).

In the novel Agu is also involved in a legal defence action. Prioritising the identity of the victim, he frames his crimes as actions for which his armed group leaders are accountable " If they are telling me to kill, then I will kill; if they are telling me to shoot, then I will shoot; if they are telling me to enter a woman, then I will enter a woman and I won't even say anything, even if I don't like it" (Iweala 135).

The identity of the child soldier in *Beasts of No Nation* is mostly shaped by the opinions and discourse of international human rights and humanitarian groups who oppose the employment of minors for military purposes. The narrative supports the cause of innocence in childhood rather than painting a nuanced picture of child soldiers as a part of a convoluted ideological framework.

It is possible that *Beasts of No Nation* does not fully understand the bloodshed that led the conflict. It reflects two instances. In the first, it is mentioned that Agu's father fought in a prior war and that he once told him that; “you will know when war is coming if you are seeing aeroplane and hearing GBWEM GBWEM which is meaning that they are shelling and bombing”(Iweala 66).

Second, the ritual that marks the passage from boyhood to manhood involves violence: a youngster must use a machete to slaughter an ox, a sight that all the villagers—including the children—must witness. Agu emphasises that he “would be man by now” if he had had his ceremony, hence the latter statement is significant to him (56). Agu had not only heard his father tell stories of battles before going to fight himself, but he had also seen a fellow youngster kill an animal. Violence, however, is not restricted to rites of passage and a father’s stories; it also plays a part in what Agu describes as the “creation of [his] village when long ago great warrior and his army are just fighting for many day” (49). In this instance, a seemingly never-ending conflict forms the basis of his own village’s legend.

The concept of innocence becomes muddled in these narratives of child soldiers because children are treated as children even when they commit terrible atrocities against adults. Their acts cause them to lose their sense of innocence. They

can regain their sense of innocence, nevertheless, from the perspective that they had to resort to violence to survive. It also becomes more difficult to differentiate between childhood and innocence. Such a depiction of innocence is commonly seen in the narratives of non-Western stories of child soldiers.

Martins opines that “the concept of childhood is a state of passivity and vulnerability, which demands protection” (651). In addition, the fact that their superiors use them in many ways serves as more evidence that juvenile soldiers lose their innocence. The children are given a false feeling of security in *Beasts of No Nation*, but this is soon snatched away from them as the Commandant takes advantage of Agu and Strika's vulnerabilities for his own sexual and personal gain. In the section where the troops are about to depart and the boys desire to ride in the Commandant's truck, it is also evident that Agu and Strika are forced to labour for the approval of the Commandant “sometimes, if we are making him to happy, he is taking Strika and me to be riding in, but this is only sometimes. Most of the time, we are having to ride with the other soldier (Iweala 38).

Agu and Strika are eager to receive the Commandant’s approval. In that respect, they behave like children who tend to please a parent. In some ways, the Commandant can be seen as an abusive parental figure for the children. It may also be observed that the Commandant is actively using the children’s vulnerability in the process of recruitment. He tells them “if you are staying, I will be taking care of you and we will be fighting the enemy that is taking your father” (11). Because they lack a formed moral conscience, the youngsters find the notion of retaliation appealing and they go on to join these military groups to exact revenge on those who have harmed them. Agu uses the metaphor of a family, which is noteworthy, while describing how they have evolved beyond just an army: "We are not just like army now, we are like

school or family is what I am thinking" (Iweala 106). Agu sees the army as a substitute for a family and attempts to "assign" his fellow soldiers to different positions within the family so that "each person is finding his own best friend and is going off to this corner or that corner" (106).

Agu thinks he would never be able to go back to his early years. Although he seems to be a youngster from the outside, his experiences and mental condition indicate otherwise “I am thinking that everything is moving so fast, I will be old man before the war is over. I am knowing I am no more child so if war is ending I cannot be going back to doing child thing” (93).

This mindset of child soldiers is brought on by the startlingly high pace at which they reach maturity and presents challenges for their rehabilitation. Agu’s conversation with Amy, the humanitarian employee he meets in the disarmament camp, serves as an example of how he displays this trauma in social situations “…but every time I am sitting with her I am thinking I am like old man and she is like small girl because I am fighting in war and she is not even knowing what war is. (140)

Agu often states that he is no longer a child. The reader gets to see what goes on in the mind of a youngster who has just experienced horrible events:

> nothing is the same anymore. I am not being able to be sleeping at all when it is time to sleep. Each time I am lying down my head, some voice inside of me is shouting and starting to make too much trouble so I cannot even be closing my eye. (133)

Additionally, Agu uses coping mechanisms, such as his constant insistence on telling himself that he is not a terrible child. But in other circumstances, Agu still behaves like a child. The expressive imaginations of Agu and other child soldiers are

rendered to serve as a contrast and expose the both sides of the child soldiers. One such instance is Strika's method of drawing pictures:

> I was asking Strika whether his own was hurting so much after the first time, and he was drawing me picture in the mud of man bending down with his hand on the ground and gun and bullet shooting up his bottom. (Iweala 85)

The commandant's order for the soldiers to be ready at fourteen hundred hours is another instance of the children reverting to their infantile mindset. He says:

> Everybody is knowing that the day is not having fourteen hundred hours and I am looking down the line of soldier to see if Strika is also thinking it is funny. He is leaning forward to look at me, sticking out his tongue and opening his mouth wide. (35)

These instances highlight the reality that child soldiers nonetheless behave like children while being made to grow up sooner than other children. The idea that the harm these former child soldiers have suffered is almost irreparable, as they attempt to recapture their youth and all of its qualities. Agu acknowledges that he is glad he is no longer a child soldier, but he still displays the impact of his experiences.

Childhood innocence in the context of stories of child soldiers exposes the reader to the harsh fact that innocence is a notion that is malleable and susceptible to the devastation of war rather than a static condition. Innocence is shattered by violence, terror and sorrow in people like Agu. But even in the shadows, there are glimmers of optimism and resilience that serve as a reminder of the eternal spirit of

youth. Remnants of fortitude can be heard in the jumbled fabric of youthful innocence, calling the reader to accept the intricacies of early lives moulded by confrontation.

Child soldiers confront many moral conundrums; they are a sad reality in many places of the world. The story of the child soldier, which is especially common in African literature, depicts the young moral and legal innocence of the young characters. But these stories also show how innocence may be lost when horrible crimes like murder and sexual assault are committed. Since childhood and the horrors of war are incompatible, international rules forbid young people from participating in armed conflict. However, the question of whether child soldiers may still be regarded as morally innocent after seeing such atrocities remains. This study explores the complicated issues of innocence and culpability in light of the activities undertaken by child soldiers and delves into the moral quandaries they face.

The narrative structures of the novels depicting child soldiers very often build the moral innocence of its young protagonists. These structures end in the loss of this innocence, typically through sequences in which child soldiers murder or sexually abuse other characters. These legal requirements often rest on some of the same principles as moral notions of youthful innocence. They argue that the behaviours that make up contemporary armed conflict is incompatible with childhood, which is why youth engagement in combat is prohibited. The memories of the horrors of war inevitably deal with the erosion of the loss of innocence of the child soldiers. The main characters continue to be presumed innocent as long as they have not committed any crimes, but many of the stories leave open the question of whether a child who has seen the cruelty of armed conflict or experienced it first-hand as a victim can also continue to be morally innocent. Though murdering is the most prevalent cause for

the demise of moral innocence, which is central to the child soldier story genre, these actions are nearly never explicitly mentioned as having this impact.

Child soldiers who rape adults are in a more dangerous situation; this challenges Western norms about the moral and legal innocence of children. That is shown in child soldier narratives. Depending on the circumstances and individuals engaged in this otherwise unjustifiable act of wartime brutality, the situations where the child soldiers commit rape, lend themselves to a variety of interpretations. Two of the three main characters—who rape adult civilians—are shown to be likeable. Agu mentions twice that he has raped someone. Agu acknowledges that his elder allies become giddy when they get close to a city that has a brothel, "I am too young to be knowing about these thing even if I am knowing from how the men are talking about woman" (Iweala 101). Later in the narrative, he expresses sorrow for these deeds but also disputes his involvement: “I am entering woman and not even saying anything even if I am not liking it” (135).

The sequences in which Agu kills others come before these, and they are also depicted with ambiguity. Though it would be challenging according to Western standards to conclude that these child soldiers might maintain their moral innocence in the wake of the rapes and murders that they commit, *Beasts of No Nation* encourages this view. Agu comforts himself by thinking similar things “I am soldier and soldier is not bad if he is killing. I am telling this to myself because soldier is supposed to be killing, killing, killing. So if I am killing, then I am only doing what is right” (23).

Despite his first justifications, Agu recognises that his acts are immoral and unethical. Following a particularly graphic experience, he declares, “I am not Devil. I am not bad boy. I am not bad boy. Devil is not blessing me and I am not going to

hell", before concluding, "But I am still thinking maybe Devil born me and that is why I am doing all of this" (Iweala 48).

The explanation that he just carries out his duties as a soldier does not comfort him, and he questions if this is because he is a naturally bad person. Furthermore, this rationale is not accepted by the population he preys on. Jarrett-Macauley opines that

> that would want a kid that is solely capable of murder? That sounds like what type of nightmare? What sort, you ask? It would be like harbouring something evil in the family if they kept these children here. Isn't there anything bad going on? (19)

Narratives of child soldiers illuminate the ethical quandaries encountered by these adolescent people who have been thrown into the harsh realm of military warfare. It calls into doubt their moral standing and legal culpability because their involvement in crimes like rape and murder illustrates their loss of innocence. Although the novel frequently leaves the issue of moral innocence open-ended, it subverts conventional ideas of childhood innocence and makes the reader face the complexity of these children's lives. It is imperative to examine the psychological effects of the conduct of child soldiers' and investigate pathways for healing and rehabilitation because they are both perpetrators and victims at the same time. The moral quandaries that child soldiers confront ultimately serve as a call to action for society to shield and assist these defenceless people, guaranteeing their reintegration into society and the recovery of their moral compass.

According to Michael Wessells, "killing produces a host of emotional and cognitive changes that enable additional killing and blunt potentially inhibiting reactions such as disgust and guilt" (79). Wessells's comment makes sense in the

context of mass crimes involving young people for Iweala also portrays the murders Agu commits as an act for which he is not legally accountable. Agu claims to be innocent after killing someone for the first time. Agu later assumes complete control of the killing process, claiming that his first victim's noise "The man is screaming, AYEEEIII, louder than the sound of bullet whistling and then he is bringing his hand to his head, but it is not helping because his head is cracking and the blood is spilling out like milk from coconut. (Iweala 21)

Even though the action momentarily devastates him and suggests that he is now cognizant that soldiering is not a call to gaming. It is not the killing that irritates Agu, but rather the victim's reaction. It appears that Agu is irritated with the victim for he believes that the violent crime was committed by someone else, not by him. This kind of thinking is only another example in the novel of Agu's refusal to accept responsibility for his actions. This is how he combats the overwhelming sense of remorse that follows the previous act: "I am not bad boy. I am not bad boy. I am soldier and soldier is not bad if he is killing." (23)

Agu wants his audience to know that he follows instructions, which is why he brings up and reiterates a soldier's duty. He believes that he is also not accountable for an act of required reverence, much like a soldier who follows orders from a superior. Agu emphasises this concept once again when he considers what it means to be a soldier. After giving it some thought, he is sure that becoming a soldier means being at the mercy of superior authority: "people making you do thing that you are not wanting to do and not to be doing whatever you are wanting which is what they are doing in movie" (31).

Agu retains his moral conscience even while engaging in crimes. Agu experiences shame at various times when he is a member of the armed organisation. He has a twinge of guilt. Agu has lost his family, and he misses his family, especially his mother who instilled in him the values of the Bible, and he has not lost the lessons he had learnt about the repercussions of vices and wrongdoings. For instance, Agu remembers the following idea that crosses his head when he feels forced to carry out his first killing: “And I am thinking, I am killing, killing, then I am going to hell so I am smelling fire and smoke and it is harding to breath” (Iweala 18). He recalls again that he wants to ask the Commandant to exempt him from the group's business because, as he describes it so vividly, his mind is “becoming rotten like the inside of fruit” (89). Agu’s knowledge of his moral shame, which he experiences from time to time, shows that he has not yet fully descended into irreversible moral degradation.

Agu’s moral dilemma and remorse in *Beasts of No Nation* is a reflection of the long-term psychological effects that might result from seeing atrocities at such a young age. Agu’s inability to understand the morality of his acts, his efforts to defend them with the idea of soldierly duty, and his moments of guilt and humiliation all serve to emphasise the severe effects that violence and conflict can have on a person's mental health. Agu’s realisation of his moral humiliation, however, offers a ray of hope despite the darkness that consumes his thoughts and raises the possibility of recovery and atonement. The long-term psychological ramifications of violence, the necessity for rehabilitation and recovery, and the ability of individuals like Agu to regain their humanity even in the face of horrible horrors.

War and its Impact on Children

Although war has a terrible effect on every element of society, children may suffer its most disastrous effects. The boundaries between victim and offender are blurred when youngsters are coerced into horrific behaviours during disputes. The impact of war on children is poignantly shown *Beasts of No Nation*. Vinod and Gayathri argue that as children are always perceived as victims due as they are usually coerced to participate in these heinous activities, the distinction between perpetrator and victim should be understood as an abstract concept: “Though it is the circumstance of war that had turned them to become victimisers, the agency behind their actions cannot be ignored under any circumstances” (Vinod and Gayathri 1545).

Beasts of No Nation is a global theme since all human races may relate to the author's imagined paths. The novel offers a perceptive portrayal of the effects of war on children. Iweala seems to be speaking through his protagonist Agu when he conveys his anguish and sorrow over the suffering of defenceless youngsters who are used as pawns by adults who are meant to be protecting them. Molara Wood claims that the author was inspired to write this spine-tingling and gripping account after hearing the heartbreaking and agonising tale of a young lady who was recruited into the war (145). Her statement reads as follows: "Uzodinma Iweala was inspired by an encounter with a young woman who was once involved in a conflict"(145).

Agu is compelled to join the rebel army amid battle after being separated from his mother and only sister by UN peacekeepers, but he hides out on his father's orders. Strika and other soldiers eventually find him and lead him to a cunning commandant who offers aid and promises to look after Agu if he fights alongside

them: “what am I supposed to be doing? So I am joining. Just like that. I am a soldier” (Iweala 13).

It is clear from the above instance that children's vulnerability during times of conflict will undoubtedly rise if they are separated from their family or of their family is killed. In a particular discourse on the war in Africa, James Scott makes the following argument: Children's typical reliance on their immediate or extended family is replaced with a clientalist type of non-kin relation, such as those that usually arise when ascriptive ties, like kinship, no longer function as an effective means of personal security or advancement. (62)

Since children are never allowed to use their names or any other recognised name connected to their families and communities, identity loss is another terrible effect of child soldiering. Their new titles correspond to their positions during the conflict. One small child named Griot shares his stories, particularly those about his village before the conflict, while another named Preacher carries a Bible about and even uses it as a pillow. Encouraging the children to embrace their new duties and a world apart from their folks is the goal. Agu bemoans the horror of battle and cranes his neck to look out for an adversary to kill:

> So many times pass us now. I am not seeing road or village or children for too long. I am seeing war, one evil spirit sitting in the bush just having too much happiness because all the time he is eating what he wants to eat and seeing what he wants to be seeing. (118)

The reason for child soldiers turning into monsters is their consistent drug use. In this story, young soldiers receive a stimulant called "gun juice" that gives them courage, strength, and the ability to forget about their homes and family. The juice

turns them into ravenous monsters who are constantly ready to kill. Agu states during an attack on a specific village:

> I am feeling like man with big muscle and small head and I am thinking that nothing can be stopping me and nothing can be slowing me down-not even the hill we are climbing. I am like Leopard hunting in bush. (Iweala 56)

Child soldiers frequently endure sexual abuse in addition to a litany of other atrocities. In this account, Agu finds it difficult to describe the terrible sensation of being sexually violated by the commandant: "I do not want his finger creeping all over my body…his tongue to be touching me and feeling like slug should be feeling if it is on your body" (103). The little child continues with this graphic account of the commandant's sex adventure:

> after making me touching his soldier and all of the thing with my hand and with my tongue and lip, he was telling me to kneel and then he was entering inside of me the way the man goat is sometimes mistaking other man goat for woman goat and going inside of them. (85)

"If you are watching it, then you are knowing it is not natural," Agu recognises even in his innocence (85). The referents "big muscle," "small head," and "like leopard" are metaphors and similes that, according to Edgar Nabutanyi, "capture the monstrosity of a child soldier phenomenon" (Nabutanyi 57).Nebutanyi states, "… the allusion to goats further summons the beasts of the novel's title while capturing the child's lack of comprehension and a language to describe the horror of these homoerotic paedophilic experiences. (60)

Additionally, Iweala gives unsettling depth to basic verbs like "touching," "feeling," and "creeping," which expresses Agu's suffering and shudder in disgust and helpless anxiety at the repulsive closeness: “Good soldier is following order anyway and it is order for you to let me touch you like this. I don’t want to be good soldier but I am not saying that” (Iweala 92). Strika finds it difficult to express how the commandant sexually abuses him, but the trauma causes him to lose his voice. The claim made by Caruth and Anne Whitehead that "trauma is antilanguage" is echoed by his incapacity to express his suffering (Nebutanyi 78).

Elaine Scarry contends that "extreme pain destroys language itself" in another setting (Scarry 54). Strika depicts “picture in the mud of a man bending down with his hands on the ground and gun and bullet shooting up his bottom” (Iweala. 104-105). Nebutanyi goes on to say, "Strika's euphemistic drawing's iconography not only embodies the vulnerable child beneath the manic laughter mentioned earlier, but it also indicts the predatory proclivities of militaristic masculinities" (Nebutanyi 61). The novel confronts the enormity of the struggles faced by child soldiers throughout the conflict. In most cases, a young soldier on the front line of battle is does not even have the outfit of a regular soldier. Neither a rifle nor the appropriate battle gear is on him. Agu is initially given a knife in this story since he is too weak to handle a pistol.

When Amy, the White American patient in the rehab facility, inquires about his thoughts and feelings. "I am thinking about my future," Agu responds (Iweala 114). Amy questions again, "What is your future?" "I see myself becoming a doctor or engineer and making too much money so I am becoming big man and never having to fight war ever again," he responds (114). Every child wants this, but the reality of war often shatters this noble ambition, especially when they are taken away from their

parents against their will. Agu is forcibly separated from his parents and eventually drafted into the army at a very young age, which destroys his hopes of becoming a doctor or engineer. Agu has mental and psychological distress due to these wartime realities, which sometimes instill suicidal thoughts in him. Agu admits this to the white woman throughout their conversation:

> I am telling her, I am hearing bullet and screaming in my ear and I am wanting to be dying so I am never hearing it again. I am wanting to lie down on the ground with my eyes closed and smell of mud in my nose, just like Strika. (Iweala 141)

The author employs a number of figures of speech, such as personification, simile, and metaphor, to generate visceral images. By using these techniques, Iweala can convey the raw emotion of combat as well as the fear that accompanies a young soldier in a cruel war environment. Iweala conveys the raw emotion and the unfathomable suffering endured by these innocent victims with the use of strong words and striking images. An instance is how Griot recalls the fragmented bits of his mother's body as a chunk of meat :

> I am hearing another GBWEM landing right next to me. And then I am feeling fire on my body but I wasn't burning. When I am looking up, I am seeing people hanging like coconut before it is falling off. Ah…my mother is dead. All of her meats just hanging from tree. (79)

Since all children in conflict zones are seen as victims in this discourse, "child soldiering" is conceptualised as a blatant violation of both international humanitarian law and universal children's rights (Lee 3). According to Sinervo and Cheney,

"humanitarian intervention has long been associated with the African continent and its people, particularly its children" (14).

Biblical battle stories are Agu's favourite form of reading, which his mother used to do every night until they parted ways. Examining Agu's background before the war is essential since the novel hardly recognises the link between his exposure to militarism. If exposure to militarism and violence results in the loss of innocence, then it is reasonable to wonder if the boy's early mental influence was shaped by his fascination with stories of violent events such as Cain killing his brother Abel, Job's numerous traumas from his children's violent deaths, or David defeating Goliath. These stories are, in fact, so compelling and captivating that Agu finds himself "mentally reliving them, picturing how Goliath is laughing until David is cutting off his head. I am seeing all of these things when she [my mother] is reading and thinking that I am wanting to be warrior" (Iweala 25) .

This section of Agu's narrative implies that his involvement in the Commandant's killing squad robs him of his innocence, and then that process of loss has its origins deeply ingrained and fostered even before he becomes a child soldier. Nonetheless, Agu's memory of his favourite pastime—reading the Bible—seems to imply the propriety of his upbringing as a morally aware and devout young person in Iweala's story.

To put it another way, Iweala uses Agu to support the notion that his coercive enlistment into an armed organisation corrupts and ruins his innocence as a boy, turning him into a monster capable of immense, heartless slaughter. Nonfictional accounts of child soldiers often touch on themes related to the nature of life and early

experiences before becoming child soldiers. The story of a former child soldier who witnesses crimes that steal children of their innocence is told in *Beasts of No Nation*. Because of this, Robert Eaglestone calls the book a "novelized testimony" (Eaglestone 82). Agu begins with the words "It is starting like this" to set the reader up for his account of his horrific childhood during the war. (Iweala 1)

The fundamental explanation for Agu's membership in the faceless Commandant's armed organisation is that he is subjected to subtle persuasion, as being outside the group meant death and poverty. As he approaches the Commandant, who forces him to join his group, Agu asks, “So I am joining. Just like that. I am soldier” (Iweala 11). He explains that he avoids thinking because people like Luftenant (sic.), the Commandant's second-in-command, discourage him from thinking, even if he still attempts to consider his affiliation with the organisation in light of his developing grasp of its direction. Agu complies with Luftenant's(sic.) advice, which he describes as the heavy hands that push him to take actions he otherwise would not have taken.

Agu calls himself and his fellow young soldiers the "weak" soldiers. Their childhood weakness renders them unfit for combat. Their leaders give them orders on everything they do. As such, it is impossible to hold incompetent troops responsible for the actions of others. Iweala exposes the impact of the human rights and humanitarian discourse on his portrayal of child soldiering by structuring Agu's logic in this way. Children are characterised as immature and without initiative in that discourse, which is rooted in Western conceptions of infancy. Agu is shown in a kind way as a young child incapable of doing crimes. Despite Agu's assertion, "I am a soldier now," which indicates that he has grown-up knowledge and experience, the

predominant impression left by this story is that Agu is still a child, a victim of the twisted reasoning of grownups (Iweala31).

Agu still acts like a child despite having witnessed and taken part in the rape of adult civilian women. Agu denies having grown up and declares, "Women in this place is just too beautiful," when the Commandant brings the party to his village: “I am really wanting one to be making my soldier feel good. I am wanting one but not like how we are getting them in battle” (Iweala 95, 101).

Agu acknowledges his wrongdoings while simultaneously clearing himself and assigning responsibility to his superiors. Towards the novel's conclusion, he considers his horrible deeds but instantly denies taking responsibility for them—a startling illustration of this vindicatory doubleness. Agu remarks: “And then I am thinking of all the thing I am doing. If they are ordering me KILL, I am killing, SHOOT, I am shooting, ENTER WOMAN” (135).

Iweala's work forcefully reifies a substantial portion of humanitarian discourse on child soldiering. Within the core of conflict zones, children encounter unspeakable atrocities and difficulties that jeopardise their existence. These young people frequently create coping strategies as a way to make sense of the turmoil and trauma they are surrounded by after being exposed to the harsh reality of armed conflict. Through the prism of Agu's terrifying experiences in *Beasts of No Nation* the concept of ‘Coping Mechanisms Developed by Children in War Zones’ becomes clear, offering a moving examination of the tactics used by young survivors to withstand the incredible. These coping strategies provide insight into the resilience and inventiveness of children caught in the crossfire of violence, ranging from the widespread usage of substances like "gun juice" to emotional detachment and dissociation. “But everybody is getting gun juice. Everybody is always wanting gun

juice because it is drug and making life easy easy. Gun juice is making you to be stronger and braver" (Iweala 44).

A noteworthy coping strategy that is depicted in the novel is the use of drugs like "gun juice." As Agu puts it, "everybody is getting gun juice," underscoring the widespread usage of narcotics as a coping mechanism for the brutality of war (Iweala 44). Gun juice's portrayal as a narcotic that makes life "easy easy" suggests that children, like Agu, use drugs to ease the psychological and emotional burdens brought on by the trauma and bloodshed of war.

Gun juice has a variety of uses as a coping technique. According to Agu, it gives people courage and strength, maybe giving them a sense of empowerment or a way out of the horror and cruelty of the fighting. The phrase "It is making your head to hurt" alludes to a numbing effect, implying that the medication may lessen the emotional suffering brought on by the crimes that have been seen and committed (44). The comparison of gun juice's flavour to "bullet and sugarcane" creates a poignant contrast, signifying both the harsh reality of war (bullet) and a hint of sweetness (sugarcane), which might be interpreted as a reprieve or comfort.

Agu's narration clarifies how youngsters use these coping techniques as a desperate reaction to the dehumanising impacts of war, even if they are harmful in the long term. Examining these coping strategies helps to highlight how urgently children stranded in war areas require assistance and intervention to address mental health issues. Children may resort to drugs in conflict zones where conventional support systems are broken to deal with the psychological effects of their experiences

Children sometimes live in conditions of acute hardship and starvation in conflict zones. Substance abuse, including the use of alcohol and narcotics, develops into a survival tactic that allows individuals to momentarily avoid the mental and

physical suffering brought on by starvation. Agu's allegory of a hungry hound to describe his snarling tummy highlights the animalistic aspect of his survival fight.

Substance abuse also acts as a self-medication strategy for the psychological effects of conflict. Adolescents like Agu could turn to drugs or alcohol to help them forget the pain of loss and violence. The "gun juice" that the passage refers to is a mixture that modifies Agu's perception and offers him a way out of the harsh reality that surrounds him. Although this coping strategy offers some short-term comfort, it also adds to the general dehumanisation and abuse of young soldiers. Furthermore, equating Agu's belly with that of a ravenous dog alludes to a return to a primordial condition, underscoring the loss of normalcy and innocence in the lives of these children. Children frequently turn to natural survival strategies in conflict zones because these areas disturb the established family and community systems.

In *Beasts of No Nation* survival and dread have complex interactions. The main character, Agu, becomes embroiled in a violent battle that forces him to enrol in the army against his choice. Since Agu witnesses and takes part in horrifying events that will continue to affect him for the rest of his life, fear plays a significant role in his path. Loyalty is another crucial consideration, which Agu must weigh against his commitments to his family, his fellow soldiers,and his survival. As he must make difficult decisions amid chaos and violence, Agu's motivation changes to one of survival. Throughout the story, the novel explores how these three elements combine to mould Agu's experiences and personality. They are taken prisoner, identified as spies, and given the choice to fight "the enemies" or perish when they stumble into a battling ambush of soldiers. Of course, children quickly agree to battle whatever the adversary is, out of dread of dying and the desire to survive long enough to see their relatives again. From there, they are completely enlisted and brainwashed into

accepting all forms of violence and other sins connected to armed conflict. There are further means by which children might be kidnapped and enlisted in military conflicts. Lying in wait for children at playgrounds and then accusing them of siding with the enemy forces, is one technique to do this. In his War Stories, John Sherman describes this scenario as follows: hardly ever encounter guys in the recently freed villages who are older than, say, thirteen or fourteen. This age group is risky. (Sherman 54)

"What am I supposed to be doing?" is a rhetorical question that highlights Agu's powerlessness in such a setting as a young child (Iweala 114). As a child, Agu is certainly unable to stop his father's murder. The information above makes it evident that Agu's need to survive pushes him to join the rebel organisation as food is guaranteed and one does not have to work constantly to make ends meet. Zack-Williams believes that life in the army offers some thrill in contrast to the tedium of living on the streets. Along with prestige and authority, the uniform and pistol also provide the chance to exact revenge on those who have wronged you in the past (143).

In fact, despite Agu being terrorised and mistreated by the rebel group led by the Commandant, he joins them. Agu believes that he will finally be free from misery and terror if he joins the rebel organisation that is oppressing him. It is also clear that Agu's desire to join the rebel organisation is motivated by more than just fear; he cannot also reason and critically evaluate events while he is experiencing emotional stress. Those who have experienced trauma often behave in this way. Sandra Bloom remarks that stress also significantly impairs one's ability to think coherently. When one senses danger, one's bodies instinctively react without conscious thought or deliberation (Bloom, " Trauma Theory Abrreviated" np). According to Strueber et al., their early

experiences caused them so much harm that they have permanently lost their ability to empathise with other people and have grown distant from them. Beyond the need for basic survival, they are incapable of loving or caring for any life but their own, and even their ability to love and respect themselves is extremely limited or non-existent(Strueber et al 23).

The Role of Language and Imagery in Depicting Trauma

Uzodinma Iweala uses language and imagery to give a realistic and deeply moving account of the horrors of war. Agu uses his narrative to explore the intricacies of human pain, illustrating these points with a combination of vivid imagery that portrays his terrifying journey. This section examines how language and imagery are used to portray trauma in *Beasts of No Nation* emphasising how these literary devices make one comprehend better Agu's mental condition and the lasting effects of his experiences.

In the novel, the anguish of the characters is portrayed mostly through language and images. These literary techniques are employed by Uzodinma Iweala to give a vivid and emotional depiction of the horrors of war. Specifically, Agu's narration illustrates his psychological state and the terrible effects of his events. Iweala conveys the bewilderment and disorientation that follow catastrophic occurrences through Agu's vocabulary and diction. Agu's narrative is difficult to understand at first, but it gets easier to follow as he adjusts to his new situation. His vocabulary has changed throughout time, reflecting both his development and the evolving nature of his trauma.

Iweala immerses the reader in the character's psychological and emotional

experiences through the deft use of language and images. By adding sensory elements, the author creates a spooky image that makes the reader feel something visceral and helps them comprehend the characters' anguish on a deeper level. The novel offers a comprehensive analysis of the human character in the face of tremendous hardship through its honest and heart-breaking description of suffering. Gehrmann states that *Beasts of No Nation* depicts youngsters who are "caught between childhood and adulthood and at the same time points to the difficulties of human communication." She thinks that two important issues in *Beasts of No Nation* are the linguistic problems and the idea of humanity being lost to battle. (Gehrmann 34)

Agu uses a distinct Pidgin English dialect, known as "Rotten English," as a communication tool. This language, which combines tribal dialect with English terminology, is exemplified by Ken Saro-Wiwa in Sozaboy and has been picked up by other writers of stories about child soldiers. The phrase "Rotten English" suggests that African languages have contaminated or forced their way onto English. The author makes the case that Agu's use of this hybrid language demonstrates agency and subjectivity that is rarely given to a narrator in such a helpless situation, allowing him to engage with the Western world while maintaining his marginalised status as a subject-abject.Iweala's depiction of a child soldier's physical and social surroundings is dominated by the abysmal, forcing the reader to confront psychosomatic and morally repugnant situations from Agu's point of view.

Beasts of No Nation immediately immerses the reader in Agu's deplorable situation in its first scene. The novel opens with a visceral reaction—Agu feels like bugs are crawling all over his body. Agu's want to sneeze, which represents the need

to rid his body of the dirt, both real and imagined, intensifies this agony. “It is starting like this. I am feeling itch like insect is crawling on my skin, and then my head is just starting to tingle right between my eye, and then I am wanting to sneeze because my nose is itching” (Iweala 9).

The deliberate use of language and images highlights the significance of trauma in Agu's story. The use of "Rotten English" creates a link between Agu's experiences and the larger world, giving him a voice that extends beyond his local surroundings. The frightening voice and the insect images capture the mental and physical aspects of trauma, developing a strong link between language, imagery, and the portrayal of Agu's painful journey.

Meanwhile, the vivid visual emphasises the severity of Agu's suffering and conveys the visceral essence of trauma, such as the scream that haunts him as well as the sensation of insects crawling on his skin. Iweala creates a disturbing picture of the brutality and suffering that Agu observes and takes part in through the use of strong images. For instance, the author details instances of vicious murders, coerced aggression, and even child rape. Even though they are disturbing, these elaborate details help to illustrate the extent of the protagonists' distress.

The very constant use of the present progressive in Agu's language is its most notable characteristic. This gives the narrative a sense of immediacy that amplifies its impact and intensity. The progressive form serves to emphasise the horrific actions in the novel, particularly when they are repeated in killing scenes. One such instance is when Agu says, "I am chopping and chopping and chopping until I am looking up and it is dark” in the scene where he kills the woman and her daughter (Iweala 51). The

reader feels disoriented since the language imitates the bewilderment that is typical of trauma (Lambert 284).

Iweala also does a great job of capturing the characters' true voices and bringing them to life through speech. The story develops empathy for the characters through the use of dialects and colloquial language. Giving voice to the several races and cultures shown in the novel, the dialogue showcases the linguistic variety of the area. This linguistic realism gives the story more depth and complexity, which helps readers better comprehend the characters' hardships and the setting in which they take place. Agu starts to hear many voices:

> I am hearing so many thing: the clicking of insect, the sound of truck grumbling like one kind of animal, and then the sound of somebody shouting, TAKE YOUR POSITION RIGHT NOW! QUICK! QUICK QUICK! MOVE WITH SPEED! MOVE FAST OH! (Iweala 9)

Agu uses storytelling as a means of escape and comfort, making up his own stories to keep himself alive. Agu can temporarily escape his unpleasant world and regain some degree of control over his own story because of the power of words. In addition, the narrative's emotional power is increased by the author's deft use of language tropes like rhythm and repetition. By simulating the erratic and chaotic nature of the characters' lives, these elements evoke a feeling of urgency and intensity. One is drawn into the experiences of the characters through rhythms of their prose and the cadence of spoken language.

Agu makes extensive use of similes in throughout the text. For example, he compares agony to the "flat side of a machete" and compares the blood gushing from

the head of his first victim to "milk from a coconut" (Iweala 3, 21). These similes communicate and transfer unpleasant experiences very effectively. Statements like "killing is like falling in love" is one of the strongest exhortations in the novel, as it forces Agu to let go of his thoughts and allow the killing to occur (112). Furthermore, it suggests that murdering releases endorphins in a manner akin to falling in love since it causes Agu to experience "like electricity running through my body" and causes him to get rigid between his legs (21). Thus, this metaphor gives the reader a sense of what it is like to kill someone.

Furthermore, noises are sometimes recorded using capital letters to denote yelling, such as "COME ON! COME ON QUICK QUICK QUICK!", and onomatopoeia, such as "GBWEM! GBWEM!" (123, 66) for shelling and bombing. The story becomes more vivid and lively as a result of these onomatopoetic devices. There are a lot of repetitions throughout Agu's story. Like in other fictional narratives of trauma, *Beasts of No Nation* uses recurring words, phrases, or themes that are effectively over determined yet narratively dissociated to produce the consequences of the first retelling of Agu's terrible recollections. Agu's narrative frequently repeats nouns, verbs, adjectives, and even entire sentences. One such instance is when he is described as "just standing there crying crying, shaking shaking, looking looking" before his first kill (18). These repetitions successfully convey to the reader Agu's emotive, frightened, bewildered and consequently traumatised state of mind while also reinforcing the gravity of the incident or occurrence.

Iweala's use of creative language, skilful choice of words, and narration through a child's viewpoint allows the reader to feel Agu's anguish, victimisation, and

regret in addition to witnessing the horrific, gruesome carnage of war. The reader feels a similar sense of bewilderment since the language imitates confusion that is characteristic of shock.

Beasts of No Nation provides a horrifying examination of the cruelty of juvenile enlistment amid the turmoil of civil war in West Africa. The novel offers a graphic and uncompromising depiction of the horrors of war and the dehumanizing impacts of violence on innocent lives through the eyes of the young protagonist, Agu. Iweala's narrative deftly handles the intricacies of trauma, survival, and losing innocence in the face of unspeakable pain. Fundamentally, *Beasts of No Nation* is a celebration of the human spirit's tenacity in the face of unfathomable hardship. The journey that Agu takes from boyhood to that of child soldier reflects the larger themes of betrayal, grief, and the pursuit of redemption in the face of disaster. The ugly realities of war—from the cruelty of battle to the moral dilemma of surviving at all costs—are shown to readers through Agu's eyes.

Iweala's depiction of the psychological effects of war on impressionable minds is among the novel's most stunning features. The novel vividly depicts the horror of conflict, from the mayhem of battle to the numbing misery of loss and loneliness, through genuine emotion and vivid imagery. Iweala's storytelling emphasizes the profound effects of trauma on people's lives, making it difficult to watch the anguish and suffering of individuals caught in the crossfire of war.

Chapter 6

God Help the Child: Childhood Trauma and Racial Identity

This chapter is an investigation into the thematic depths of Toni Morrison's *God Help the Child,* looking at Morrison's examination of childhood trauma from the perspective of racial identity. In *God Help the Child* Toni Morrison explores the intricate relationships between racial identity and early trauma, invoking the readers to contemplate deeply on the lasting effects of institutional oppression and individual fortitude. Morrison creates a story that examines how trauma affects both individual experiences and societal narratives of race, identity and belonging against the background of modern-day America. The protagonist of *God Help the Child* is a young African lady named Bride who is battling the effects of her difficult background and the legacy of trauma passed down through generations. Morrison presents readers with the complex ways in which racism interacts with pain, privilege and resilience through Bride's path of self-discovery and healing.

The novel centers around Lula Ann Bridewell, a young woman with blue-black skin who is neglected and abused by her parents who are ashamed of her appearance. Bride, as she calls herself, grows up to become a successful and glamorous woman in the perfume and fashion industry, but she is haunted by her traumatic childhood experiences. The novel follows Bride as she attempts to confront her past and find closure. She tracks down a woman named Sofia, whom she had falsely testified against years earlier, and tries to make amends.

The effect of early trauma on the formation of racial identity is one of the main themes of *God Help the Child*. The novel gives a detailed depiction of how

trauma alters people's psyches and influences views of themselves and other people as Bride works through the difficulties of her history and faces the ghosts of her early years. Morrison skilfully examines how individual trauma experiences interact with societal norms and institutional racism, emphasizing how race affects prospects for recovery and development.

The novel delivers a biting indictment of the persistent effects of racism and colourism in modern-day America. Morrison exposes readers to the ways in structural inequalities feed pain and inequity cycles through Bride's encounters with individuals from a range of ethnic and socio-economic backgrounds. By doing this, she pushes readers to acknowledge their roles in oppressive institutions as well as the shared duty to tear down the structural obstacles that stand in the way of justice and healing.

This chapter is an attempt to explore the thematic depth of *God Help the Child*, Morrison’s use of narrative devices and her handling of the complicated issues of racial identity and childhood trauma. By closely examining significant passages in the novel, the chapter seeks to reveal the deep truths that underpin Morrison's examination of race, trauma, and the human spirit’s ability to persevere in the face of hardship.

Contextual Background: African-American Experience

The dark periods of American history, those characterised by slavery, segregation, systematic racism and continuous civil rights struggles are intricately linked to the historical trajectory of African-American trauma. This trauma has its origins in the age of slavery when millions of Africans were taken into the Americas against their will and subjected to unspeakable mistreatment. The African-America

population has long-lasting psychological wounds as a result of the cruelty of the transatlantic slave trade and the dehumanising circumstances of slavery. During the post-Civil War era, also known as the Reconstruction era, those who had previously been slaves were promised freedom. However, the emergence of Jim Crow laws created a system of racial segregation that continued to be the basis for violence and prejudice against African Americans. In addition to institutional racism, economic exploitation and lynchings, spread widely and these practices added to the community's overall pain.

Morrison's insight into the human psychology is evident as she depicts the physical and psychological damages in the characters. Linda L. Kick observes how Morrison has always been more interested in the characters that manage to disengage from their psychological and physical damages to embrace the extant African-American experience as the human experience (203).

Morrison presents the slavery of the past as the root of the trauma of the present generation; she introduces Booker as an undergraduate who has taken the all courses offered in African-American studies and yet is not satisfied with the explanations provided by the professors to on his queries regarding slavery, and African-American cohesion and repulsion. She says:

> He suspected most of the real answers concerning slavery, lynching, forced labor, share-cropping, racism, Reconstruction, Jim Crow, prison labor, migration,civil rights, and black revolution movements were all about money. Money withheld, money stolen, money as power, as war. Where was the lecture on how slavery alone catapulted the whole country from agriculture into the industrial age in two decades? (Morrison 110-11)

Both advancements and enduring difficulties marked the 20th century. A desire for greater possibilities was symbolised by the Great Migration, which saw millions of African Americans relocate from the rural South to metropolitan places in the North. However, there were difficulties unique to the North, such as racial conflicts and constrained economic prospects. In the fight for equality, the civil rights movement of the 1950s and 1960s was crucial. Legal improvements were the result of the fight against racial injustice led by activists such as Rosa Parks and Martin Luther King Jr. But the trauma experienced during this time which included anything from violent run-ins with the law to the murder of well-known leaders left enduring wounds on the psyche of African Americans as a whole. Racial profiling, police brutality, and differences in work and education all serve as indicators of how systemic racism still exists today and shapes the pain experienced by African Americans. Generation after generation is still affected by the historical trauma that has left its mark in the form of psychological stress, health inequalities and difficulties in forming identities.

Toni Morrison addresses this historical background in *God Help the Child.* She examines how the characters deal with the intricate network of pain stemming from centuries of racial oppression. The traumatic legacy of the African-American has its influence on Bride's experiences, illustrating the persistent effects of systematic racism and colourism on both individual and community identities. Morrison's story deftly combines intimate anecdotes within a larger historical framework to illuminate the complex relationships between racism, pain and resilience in African-American life.

Ron Eyerman’s investigation into how African American identity is formed

through the notion of cultural trauma is relevant here because it views slavery as a communal memory rather than an institution or an individual event that anchored a people's sense of self. Regarding this, Eyerman disputes the statement that "cultural trauma refers to a dramatic loss of identity and meaning, a tear in the social fabric, affecting a group of people that has achieved some degree of cohesion"(2). This means that not every member of a community has to personally experience the trauma or feel it at all. African thinkers who believed that slavery was a thing of the past rather than the present are the ones who first articulated the idea of an African-American identity. The African American identity was institutionalised in organisations and grounded by the legacy of slavery and its depiction in art and speech (Eyerman 2).

Tal goes on to argue in this way: “The representations may trigger "flashbacks" in the survivor-reader”(16). But the reader's own painful experience—rather than the survivor-author's read experience—will always be the source of the reader's recaptured trauma. One particular genre of trauma literature is composed of the works of trauma sufferers. The author's identity defines trauma-themed literature. Trauma literature is around the re-enactment and restoration of the terrible event through the words and depictions of writers who are not affected by trauma. It consists of fringe literature akin to that written by gay, feminist, and African-American authors (Tal 16–17).

Trauma may also result from an identity problem, as seen in Bride's experience in the novel. Bride is sidelined because of her skin tone. She discovers herself in a precarious situation where she is unable to recognise who she is or come to terms with her dual awareness in the dominant white supremacist society. Here,

residual and dominant cultures interact to shape trauma. People of colour must embrace the double consciousness to survive in American culture, which is ironically a melting pot of many backgrounds. Because of this, it is challenging for us to evaluate Sweetness's, Bride's mother's worldview and style of parenting:

> Some of you probably think it is a bad thing to group ourselves according to skin color- the lighter, the better- in social clubs, neighborhoods, churches, sororities, even colored schools. But how else can we hold on to a little dignity? (Morrison 4)

It is hard to pinpoint her decisions. She is more aware of this. But it is obvious that the reality of being black in a predominantly white society—where the lighter one's complexion, the higher one may rise—has influenced her decisions. Racial stigma needs to be eliminated. If not, it creates a trauma that specific groups of people experience collectively.

In *God Help the Child*, Morrison examines the complex interactions between cultural and socioeconomic factors that influence racial identity. The novel explores the nuanced dynamics of colourism in the African-American community, emphasising how social attitudes about skin tone affect personal experiences and interpersonal connections. The portrayals of the characters are significantly shaped by the ubiquitous impact of Eurocentric beauty ideals, which are deeply ingrained in American culture.

Morrison uses Bride, the main character, as a lens through which to examine the effects of colourism. Different skin tones have historical and social significance in African-American society, and skin tone continues to have an influence on people's self-worth. A major turning point in Bride's path of self-discovery is her

realisation that, in contrast to her mother Sweetness's fairer complexion, she was born with exceptionally dark skin. The long-standing legacies of enslavement and white racist ideas have sustained a cultural preference for a lighter complexion, which has a significant impact on the relationships between the characters and their views of beauty.

Morrison also looks at the ways that wider societal norms and standards of beauty interact to influence interpersonal interactions. Bride is exposed to the commodification of beauty and also to the upholding of Eurocentric values as she works in the beauty business. The novel examines how ideas of success and desirability are impacted by these criteria as they permeate social structures. The desire for approval and validation, influenced by outside opinions about one's looks, emerges as a central topic, highlighting the pervasive effect of cultural factors on the development of one's own identity.

The protagonists in the novel negotiate the intricacies of racial identity while navigating connections with their families, love relationships, and social expectations. Through her abuse of Bride, Sweetness's internalised racism serves as an example of how cultural norms can seep into and sustain families. Through its deft analysis of cultural expectations, the novel illuminates the complex ways in which racial identity is created and contested in day-to-day existence.

Toni Morrison's portrayal of Bride's early years in *God Help the Child* takes place against a background of colourism and prejudice in the African-American community. An in-depth examination of how skin-colour discrimination affects Bride's initial interactions and establishes the groundwork for her complex relationship with identity is provided in the novel. This prejudice occurs within the

family and in the society at large. The rejection of her child because of her skin tone is a manifestation of Sweetness's internalised racism. As a young girl, Bride has significant distress from this rejection. Bride's abuse, neglect, and a feeling of not belonging result from Sweetness's foolish attempt to get Bride ready for a racist society. This prejudice has a lasting emotional impact on Bride, who struggles with tolerance and self-worth all through her early years.

In addition, children's character and self-consciousness are greatly shaped by their families, a factor that is so ubiquitous as to be easily overlooked. In general, children learn how to behave in society from adults in the family. Morrison's novels are replete with instances like this from which a young reader might pick up a perspective on life. As a mother, Sweetness explains that what she did to her daughter was to shield her from a society that would be more likely to punish a child with a darker complexion. She also declares that she will never feel guilty about the manner in which she raises her daughter. The mother views her mistreatment as a kindness, a means of fortifying and readying her child for the maltreatment that society at large will inflict upon her because of the colour of her skin.

> Some of you probably think it's a bad thing to group ourselves according to skin color - the lighter, the better - in social clubs, neighborhoods, churches, sororities, even colored schools. But how else can we hold on to a little dignity? (Morrison 11)

The mother character in modernist African-American fiction is explained by Laura Doyle in "Of Race and Woman: Eugenics, Motherhood, and Racial Patriarchy" as a racially and sexually distinctive body. She goes on to say that the radicalised

mother figure has a past and knowledge based on the perceptions of a body that is peculiar to a certain race and sexual orientation. This persona executes the subjugation and utilisation of that historical information by the prevailing culture. Put another way, the race mother or group mother serves as both the cultural medium for classifying, fixing and subduing bodies and groups, as well as the point of access to a collective history and physically grounded identity. Storytelling in the twentieth century weaves its way around, through and beyond her to reshape the phenomenal self (Doyle 4). Cathy Caruth in *Unclaimed Experience* concludes that shock that functions like a physical danger is what ultimately produces trauma and that what is conveyed is "not just the meaning of the words but their performance" (134). The physical manifestation of trauma is ingrained in the body, and as it is performed, it gradually seeps into the communal memory of a nation, affecting the generations that follow.

God Help the Child is a narrative quest that explores Bride's prior recollections and self-constructed adult persona. The literary emphasis on Bride's body throughout the story links the seemingly unconnected changes to her physique into a world of pain and secret and serves as the setting for the formation of Bride's identity. Sweetness is conscious of the difficulties that her daughter will encounter. She even acknowledges:

> But how else can you avoid being spit on in a drugstore, shoving elbows at the bus stop, walking in the gutter to have the whites have the whole side walk, charged a nickel at the grocer's for a paper bag that's free to white shoppers? Let alone all the name calling. (Morrison 4)

Bride grows up without her Mother Sweetness's love and care. When Sweetness turns around, she gets icy looks from others around Bride. Still, Sweetness is more concerned about the blackness in her daughter than she is about the absence of justice.

Morrison has crafted a story that delves into the complex ways in which colourism affects the construction of identity. Whether from the family or society at large, the external forces of prejudice shape Bride's perception of who she is and where she fits in the world. The novel emphasises colourism's long-lasting effects by showing how it eats away at a person's identity and leaves wounds that last into adulthood. Furthermore, Morrison aims to demonstrate how Jim Crow laws—which were designed to "separate blacks and whites, to segregated housing and schools, to discrimination in the dispensation of justice, to the myths about interracial sex, and economic and political oppression"—have a detrimental effect on African Americans, particularly on black children (Berry and Blassingame 501). This is achieved by allowing Bride to return to her childhood and make friends with a white girl. So, the communal memory of slavery is affecting a group of people that has achieved some degree of cohesion. Children acquire their identities as a result of "coming to discover himself through a progressive comparison of his own body with other people's bodies" (Clark and Clark 600).

Bride often experiences racial strife throughout her early years. Bride's parents enjoy the advantage of having a lighter complexion in white American culture. Strangely, they expected their first child to have their colour of skin.However Bride did not inherit her parents' skin tone. When Sweetness and Louis view their infant,

they experience a terrible shock. Sweetness makes a comparison between the black people of Sudan and her child. She puts the responsibility for their child's blackness on her partner, saying that their child's black skin colour was inherited from the family of her husband rather than her own. She remarks,

> Its not my fault. So you can't blame me. I didn't do it and have no idea how it happened. It didn't take more than an hour after they pulled her out from between my legs to realize something was wrong. Really wrong. She was so black scared me. (Morrison 71)

The elements of race and racism were the subject of a great deal of research during the 1960s and 1970s, but sadly, little of that research addressed the harm that body shaming and skin colour stigmatisation have done to black people's self-esteem, particularly black women: "In part, these were ignored because much of the progressive writing in this period was done by black men" (hooks 60). It was also feasible for dark-skinned black men to overcome the restrictions of colour in ways that were not available to black women, even though black males were victims of colour caste hierarchies. *God Help the Child* provides a sophisticated analysis of the nuances around racial identity by examining the effects of prejudice and colourism on Bride's early years. In a gripping story that highlights the lingering repercussions of childhood trauma rooted in racial prejudice, Morrison challenges readers to face the harsh reality of a society that makes quick decisions about people based only on the colour of their skin.

Examining Trauma Through the Lens of Race and Family

Racism persists even in postmodern times, and it is easy to understand the

extent to which white people formerly controlled African Americans. The issues that African Americans had to deal with included racism, enslavement, sexual assault, and gender violence. *God Help the Child* depicts the intolerable state of racial injustice that Bride, the main character, is fighting. People of colour, in particular, suffered much when their circumstances were precarious.

When an individual who belongs to a particular racial group is perceived as belonging to a different racial group, it is known as racial passing. Passing is typically associated with Black people and other minorities who want to blend in with the majority white population. To go to school, to get a job and to take part in activities that are often associated with the white community, those who could pass for white frequently did so easily. People resort to practices like creating fake IDs, to enable them to enter social organizations without the proper authority or privileges. According to Richard Alba, "passing" is the most severe instance of assimilation in a culture with clear boundaries, where assimilation generally entails giving up participation in one group and accepting the dangers associated with attempting to fit in to another. The desire to hide one's origins, may even entail distancing oneself from someone very close, making passing extremely difficult and sometimes even risky. (Alba 228)

As a social practice, racial passing is mediated by the "looking relations of white supremacy," says Gayle Wald, who has made this argument throughout his research on racial relations (7). He further talks about the “normative visual epistemologies of race”, which give significance and value to visualised characteristics of skin colour, hair texture, and the like. He talks about how these visualised characteristics confine the particular circumstances and modalities of racial passage. (Wald 169)

Toni Morrison explores the complex relationships between race and family, providing an intriguing lens through which to see the consequences of trauma. Racial passing has long been associated with people attempting to merge with the predominately white society.This makes the story of Bride quite relevant. Despite being born into an African household, Bride defies conventions of racial identity since she possesses the physical attributes of a black Sudanese woman. As demonstrated by Sweetness, internalised racism and self-hatred are pervasive in African-American society. Sweetness response is: “Ain’t nobody in my family anywhere near that colour”. (Morrison 3)

Sweetness's admission captures the suffering associated with racial identity within the context of family relationships. Her dissatisfaction with Bride's appearance indicates deep-seated anxieties as well as societal norms surrounding race and notions of beauty. The disparity between the racial identities of Bride's parents and herself best captures the conflict and dissonance that arises while managing identity based on race in a familial situation. The suffering that is carried down through the generations is further highlighted by Bride's struggle to understand her racial identity in the context of her family's heritage. Bride struggles with the choices made by her parents and the history of racial prejudice, and she must deal with the long-lasting effects of trauma on her sense of identity and belonging. She discovers the link between personal and social pain as her quest for self-awareness becomes intertwined with her family's historical research.

Morrison uses the lenses of race and family to examine the enduring impact of trauma on individual identity and family relations. Readers are allowed to reflect on the enduring consequences of historical injustices and the human spirit's ability to triumph despite adversity as Bride's story highlights the complex link between racism,

trauma, and family dynamics. Morrison navigates the complex dynamics between race and family, offering perceptive viewpoints on the capacity of love, forgiveness and self-acceptance to mend historical scars.

Bride's mother Sweetness bestows love and devotion on her daughter. She is reluctant to admit that she has black blood coursing through her veins. She asserts that she was not a lousy mother.

> you have to know that, but I may have done some hurtful things to my only child because I had to protect her. Had to all because of skin privileges. At first I couldn't see past all that black to know who she was and just plain love her. But I do. I really do. I think she understands now. I think so (Morrison 43).

The cultural ramifications of race and her daughter's racial identity cause Sweetness to struggle with internal strife. Because of the deeply rooted racial stereotypes and social inequalities in American culture, Sweetness's unwillingness to recognise Bride's African-American origin is telling.

The revelation made by Sweetness that she could have mistreated her child highlights the effects of racial trauma on families. Her acknowledgement that she first found it difficult to look past Bride's blackness highlights the pervasive colourism and internalised racism found in African-American communities. This acknowledgement clarifies how trauma may materialise through intergenerational interactions and the difficulties in negotiating racial identity within familial connections. Moreover, Sweetness's admission that she acted to protect her daughter highlights the significant impact that systematic racism has on family ties (Morrison 43). The concept of "skin privileges" refers to the benefits that people with lighter skin tones have in society, emphasising how widespread racial inequality is and how it affects interpersonal

interactions. Sweetness's disclosure illustrates the difficult reality of navigating race and identity in an unjust culture that is steeped in bigotry.

Bride perceives her mother's actions as a form of racial dominance. She gets past a lot of obstacles in her life. Bride asserts that her mother's harsh attitude towards her was approved by their neighbours:

> She's sort of pretty under all that black. Neighbours and their daughters agreed. Sweetness never attended parent-teacher meetings or volleyball games. I was encouraged to take business courses not the college track, community college instead of four-year state universities. I didn't do any of that. After I don't know how many refusals, I finally got a job working stock never sales where customers would see me. I wanted the cosmetics counter but didn't dare ask for it. (Morrison 35-36)

Sweetness uses the advantages that lighter skin tones have in society to defend her abuse of her child. She justifies her behaviour by claiming that it is how she would shield her child from the harsh realities of a bigoted society. Sweetness's unwillingness to participate in school activities and her daughter's academic endeavours are clear indicators of the pressure society places on people to live up to racial stereotypes and expectations. Bride has a sense of ethnic dominance throughout her childhood as a result of her mother's actions.

Sweetness's unwillingness to accept her daughter's accomplishments and goals is a reflection of her ingrained fear of racial shame and social condemnation. The challenges Bride had in pursuing her objectives and claiming her identity highlight the long-lasting consequences of racial prejudice and familial trauma. This chapter tries to

shed light on the persistent effects of systematic racism and the tenacity of individuals who overcome its obstacles.

The bond between Sweetness and her daughter Bride is a powerful example of a mother's significant impact on traumatic events. Sweetness chose to go by "Sweetness" rather than more conventional words for mothers like "Mother" or "Mama" since she is aware of the prejudices that exist in society against people based on their race and appearance. Sweetness endeavours to safeguard herself and Bride against any possible bias and condemnation by steering clear of these conventional designations. The racist aspect of cultural norms and the pressure to meet predetermined beauty standards are highlighted by Sweetness's worry that her daughter's "funny-colored eyes" and her own "too-thick lips" may be mistaken for a black lady's (Morrison 3). She chooses to reject conventional mother titles, which raises questions about racial identity in general and how racial attitudes in society might affect family relations.

Moreover, Sweetness's recognition of the difficulties associated with being an abandoned spouse highlights the intersectionality of her experiences. Sweetness, a black woman balancing the demands of society and motherhood, bears the dual weight of gender inequity and racial prejudice, which no doubt adds to her terrible experiences. Sweetness's story illustrates how cultural standards and expectations mould and influence a mother's decisions. In the end, Sweetness's behaviour and her perspectives on motherhood highlight the complex ways that maternal influence may affect traumatic events, especially when it comes to race and identity.She remarks " Lula Ann needed to learn how to behave, how to keep her head down and not to make trouble. I don't care how many times she changes her name. Her color is a cross she

will always carry”(Morrison 4).

Sweetness’s remarks convey the weight of racial prejudice and cultural expectations that she internalises and transfers to her daughter. The story of Sweetness exposes the pervasive notion that Bride's darker skin tone is a liability—a "cross she will always carry” (4). This view highlights how widespread racial prejudice is throughout society and how it affects a mother’s views and actions.

Sweetness's claim that raising Bride required her to be "very strict" demonstrates her conviction that racial prejudices are everywhere and that strictness is the only way to overcome them. Bride's dread of discrimination and judgement from society is reflected in her emphasis on training her to "keep her head down and not to make trouble," a mindset that she has formed (Morrison 4). Insisting that "her color is a cross she will always carry" is a perfect example of how trauma is handed down through generations and how mothers shoulder the weight of their children's racial identities (4). Moreover, Sweetness's recurring refrain, "It's not my fault," conveys a deep sense of helplessness against cultural norms and institutional racism (4).

Likewise, Louis undergoes emotional frustration and vehemently denies Bride her rightful status as his daughter. To him, Bride is more than just an opponent. He stays away from her body entirely. He ends his marriage and permanently separates from Sweetness and Bride out of contempt. He forces his wife to take up Lula's responsibilities. Sweetness tells the story.

> He wasn’t a cussing man she when he said, Godamm! What the hell is this? I knew we were in trouble. That’s what did it. - what caused the fights between me and him. It broke our marriage to pieces. We had three good years together but when she was born he blamed me. (87)

The above discussions demonstrate the significant effects of colourism on the dynamics of Bride's family and marriage. Louis's response to bride's birth is indicative of his ingrained preconceptions and biases toward people of colour. Louis's surprise and dismay at Lula Ann's darker skin tone, despite their years of happiness together, highlight the pervasive cultural conditioning that associates lighter skin with superiority and beauty.

Unusually for Louis, his use of profanity highlights the depth of his emotional distress at the sight of his daughter's looks. The incredulity on his part and the blame he places on Sweetness for Lula Ann's darker skin make their marriage even more tense. Their relationship collapse serves as a metaphor for the damaging effects of colourism in families, as it breeds animosity, finger-pointing and ultimately disintegration. In addition, Louis's portrayal of Bride as an outsider and even an adversary emphasises how colourism affects Bride psychologically. The fact that Bride was raised in a setting where her father thinks less of her because of the colour of her skin probably adds to her issues with identity, self-worth and sense of belonging. This emphasises the need for increased awareness and the deconstruction of colourist attitudes and prejudices while serving as a sad reminder of the long-lasting effects of colourism on people's psyches and interpersonal connections.

> He never touched her. i never did convince him that i ain’t never, ever fooled around with another man. He was dead sure i was lying. We argued and argued till I told him her blackness must be from his own family- not mine. That’s when it get worse, so he bad he just up and left and i had to look for another, cheaper place to live. (Morrison 87)

According to Gross, it is erroneous to use colour—light, black, or in between—as a racial identifier as it is a socially and culturally produced construct which tends to privilege certain individuals over others. However, this is skin privilege—the ranking of colours is dependent on how similar or different they are to the skin of white people (Gross 11). According to Danya Glaser, the degree of physical abuse is not as highly predictive of future developmental problems in children as emotional abuse is (698–699).

Intergenerational trauma is a deeply rooted in the African-American community and its effects manifest themselves as psychological and emotional problems. Frantz Fanon explores this phenomenon in his ground-breaking work *Black Skin, White Masks,* showing how black people are deprived of their subjectivity and made to define themselves by the white gaze. Families and social systems are affected by this dynamic, which feeds a vicious cycle of trauma and self-objectification. Fanon states:

> The black person is stripped of subjectivity through the call of the other, and becomes conscious of himself as merely an object "in the midst of other objects [...] not only must the black man be black; he must be black in relation to the white man. (109–10)

Bride is traumatised by what her mother gives her. Sweetness puts the blame on the racist culture around her for neglecting Bride. Bride finds no safety, security or comfort in her home, rather she is looked down upon in disdain. She gets disdain and self-loathing at home instead of safety and comfort. In Langston Hughes's "Mother to Son", the mother figure educates her offspring to be proud of their race and culture;

Sweetness is the exact opposite of the mother-figure for she instructs her daughter to keep her head down when walking along the street and to ignore any prejudices. Bride is regarded by her classmates as "a spill of ink on white paper"(Morrison 56). Bride describes the biases she meets as "lethal viruses through [her]veins, with no antibiotic available" illustrating her submission to them (57).

Bride represents the complex dynamics of intergenerational trauma in African-American households. She struggles with the anguish passed down through the generations, from the internalised self-loathing imposed by her mother as well as with the horrific experiences brought on by society's prejudice. Morrison highlights the lingering impacts of past oppression and the strength needed to recover from intergenerational trauma through her path of self-discovery and healing. In the end, Bride represents the potential to escape the cycle of trauma and create a route towards strength and healing by facing her history and embracing her blackness.

The Evolution of Bride’s Traumatic Experiences

Bride's terrible experiences have evolved, highlighting the long-lasting repercussions of abuse in childhood and how it affects a person's identity and relationships. Deep psychological wounds from racial prejudice and the quest for self-acceptance are explored in this story through the perspectives of Bride and her mother. Bride reveals her background and the intricacies of her experiences as she moves towards the path of recovery from trauma. This section takes a look at the significant impact of Bride's upbringing on her life as well as the role that storytelling has in helping Bride heal.

Sweetness’s first words upon seeing Bride has an exonerating tone that speaks

of the shame the African Americans face over their generic black skin. Sweetness reflects on the long history of the Africans in America and of the social segregation they continue to face. She claims that despite having a relatively light complexion, her mother might have "passed easy" for a white lady, but she made a different decision for which she paid a high price. Lula Mae, Sweetness's mother, was a housekeeper for a wealthy white couple. "While they sat in the tub and God knows what other intimate things they made her do," (Morrison 11). She cleaned their backs and they consumed the meal she had prepared for them. However, when she went to the courtroom to marry Sweetness's father, they discovered "two Bibles and they had to put their hands on the one reserved for Negroes" (11). Sweetness's recollections shed further light on the reason behind her profound amazement upon first seeing her infant, a "Midnight, Sudanese black" (3). Having a child whose black skin is darker than Sweetness's would be virtually disastrous since it would represent a step back in the social hierarchy: "Ain't nobody in my family anywhere near that color. Tar is the closest I can think of yet her hair don't go with the skin […] you think she's a throwback" (3).

The period between Sweetness's and Bride's narratives is twenty-three years. The reader gets to see Bride's life as a twenty-year-old, successful entrepreneur who runs a profitable cosmetics product brand that she names 'You Girl' (10). She drives a Jaguar "When we went to clubs and concerts we rode in my beautiful Jaguar or in cars I hired. I bought him beautiful shirts—although he never wore them—and did all the shopping." (18). She resides in an opulent apartment. Bride adores parties, promiscuous sex, opulent dining establishments and having a job helper. But since she decided to go away after high school, she broke off contact with her mother. By gaining personal independence and taking control of her material surroundings, Bride

is at this point in her life building a secure atmosphere as a first step towards healing from her traumatic background.

Bride's account of the landlord's rape of a child in the rear alleyway unfurls the horrific incident. The reader is treated to a description of a "cat's meow... how pained it sounded, frightened even" (54). The youngster being raped by the landlord, whose cries were “soft, squeaky and loaded with pain" was the source of the meowing, not a cat (46). The youngster whose "little hands were fists, opening and closing" in excruciating misery between her predator's "hairy white thighs" is another vivid image that will never fade (56).

Jenny Edkins in her book *Trauma and the Memory of Politics* states that "[w]itnessing violence done to others and surviving can seem to be as traumatic as suffering brutality oneself" (4). Ironically, Bride experienced the deep regret of having to fabricate evidence against a defenceless lady to appease her mother, as well as having helped to conceal a crime involving child abuse. Since the true predator was spared and the innocent woman's life was destroyed by the false evidence, the agonising emotions of guilt and powerlessness are severe. "what if it was the landlord my forefinger was pointing at in the courtroom?" asks Bride (Morrison 47) . Bride's psychological equilibrium is impacted by the situation's ambiguity throughout both her childhood and her adult years. But Bride shares a catharsis of her traumatic past—only when Booker is there. She states “that was one of the best talks we ever had. I felt such relief” (47). Bride, albeit at varying rates, heal from her painful experiences through the story. Bride speaks about her trauma as soon as she feels safe and secure in her relationship with Booker, but she does not entirely recover until much later in this novel, following a path of self-reconciliation and the complete disclosure of her long-kept secrets.

Toni Morrison's work poignantly illustrates the long-lasting impacts of racial prejudice and child maltreatment through the development of Bride's terrible experiences. Bride's journey towards self-reconciliation and healing is eventually facilitated by her exploration of her traumatic background and her comfort in storytelling. The novel places a strong emphasis on the necessity of empathy, comprehension and facing up to unpleasant realities as steps in the healing process. Bride's development illuminates the intricacies of trauma and the possibility of development and metamorphosis in its aftermath through her story.

Bride takes the initial step towards healing from her traumatic past—that is, establishing a safe space by becoming independent and assuming ownership of her material belongings. Herman's three phases of trauma healing are generally related to this, as she explains:

> Recovery unfolds in three stages. The central task of the first stage is the establishment of safety. The central task of the second stage is remembrance and mourning. The central task of the third stage is reconnection with ordinary life. (Herman 180)

Bride's journey from a childhood of racial oppression to an adulthood of personal hardships perfectly captures the deep and long-lasting effects of institutional racism on people's lives. Morrison deftly handles the nuances of race, identity and trauma, from Sweetness's internalised prejudices to Bride's path towards recovery and self-discovery. Bride is a living example of bravery, fortitude and the unwavering spirit of resistance against injustice as she faces her past and creates her route ahead.

Appearing as a witness at Sofia Huxely's trial on charges of child sexual abuse

is one of the most upsetting events in Bride’s life. Sweetness claims that Bride's courtroom performance made her "proud as a peacock" since "often you see a little black girl take down some evil whites" (Morrison 42). The spiteful tone of Sweetness's narrative highlights the hostility of the racial and social marginalisation they were subject to. The mother's attitude towards the child, whom she never touched, was altered by the angry exaltation she experienced. As a reward for her "courage," she "had her ears pierced and bought her a pair of earrings” (43). Despite paying a high price for her testimony, the daughter's "courage" was just fake. Bride endures lifelong, excruciating psychological suffering as a result of her defamatory accusations against Sofia, which lead to a fifteen-year jail sentence for Sofia. She could only overcome her suppressed grief by recounting those horrific events to Booker thanks to their friendship. As a result, the reader is provided with an alternative narrative of Bride's horrific background through her monologue.

Bride "begins to unravel both physically and emotionally; her miserable, loveless childhood begins to resurface" following Booker's departure (Anrig 45). As an adult, Bride desires to face her past to take back control of her life. The day Sofia is freed from Decagon Women's Correctional Centre, the jail where Sofia has spent the previous fifteen years, Bride decides to meet her in an attempt to get over her emotions of shame or self-blame for lying about Sofia Huxley. Bride meticulously plans it for a year. She delivers presents and the money for the ex-convict. Her attempt at reconciliation does not turn out as she had hoped it would be. Bride needs restorative plastic surgery as a result of Sofia outlasting her. Following their experience, Booker abruptly leaves, telling her, "You not the woman I want" (Morrison 10).

The depth of Bride's regret and self-reproach is revealed during her encounter with Sofia Huxley. Bride confronts the lady she had betrayed and acknowledges her involvement slapping false charges against her.She does not retaliate when a furious Sofia Huxley, lashes out at Bride.

> Maybe I'm just mad more at myself than at Mrs. Huxley. I reverted to the Lula Ann who never fought back. Ever. I just lay there while she beat the shit out of me. I could have died on the floor of that motel room if her face hadn't gone apple-red with fatigue. (Morrison 21)

Bride admits the weight of her remorse and the fallout from her false testimony in this vulnerable moment. Her epiphany clarifies the internal struggle she goes through when she thinks about how her choices will affect both Sofia and herself. In this poignant meditation, Toni Morrison highlights the enduring consequences of lying and the transformative power of confronting one's guilt. Morrison reminds readers of the transformational potential of addressing one's problems and asking for forgiveness as she expertly examines the complexity of guilt and redemption. Bride faces her history with bravery and humility as she works through the fallout from her deeds and sets out on a journey of self-discovery and healing.

Bride's emotional journey takes a drastic turn when Booker leaves her life; it signifies a break in the safe bond she shared with him. A loss of psychological balance might result from the lack of such a dependable person, as Herman indicates, which can impede Bride's progress towards recovery (165). Bride is forced to face the horrors of her past and the ongoing mental pain they have caused her by Booker's departure, which reveals her inner scars. Herman states that the establishment of a

safe and secure emotional connection with reliable individuals allows the traumatised victim to experience catharsis related to their psychological condition (166-167).This is the second stage of healing. Booker is Bride's confidant, whose absence indicates a loss of psychological equilibrium and whose presence allows her to express her painful history. After speaking with Booker, Bride discovers that "certain things I had buried came up fresh as though I was seeing them for the first time" (Morrison 53).

Bride is reminded of previous injuries by Booker's desertion following a small quarrel. Bride's disconnected persona, masks "stitched" childhood wounds from previous tragedies. Bride considers how:

> her life was in shambles because of him. The pieces of it that she had stitched together: personal glamour, control in an exciting even creative profession, sexual freedom and most of all a shield that protected her from any overly intense feeling, be it rage, embarrassment or love (79).

Booker departs, implying that Bride is not the person he is looking for. Bride is hurt a great deal at his leaving after six months of a love relationship. She says, “I’m scared. Something bad is happening to me. I feel like I’m melting away. I can’t explain it to you but I do know when it started. It began after he said, ‘you not the woman I want” (8).

Bride is reminded of her childhood experiences of humiliation, insecurity and rejection by Booker's remarks and abrupt, unexpected withdrawal. In addition, the hurt caused by his demeaning remarks, which Bride misinterpreted as offensive, rekindles her memories of the undeserving black child she has been hiding beneath the pretence of prosperity and status. Booker's departure, brings to Bride, memories of her childhood horrors because she feels like she did when she was a youngster.

> Without him the world was more than confusing – shallow, cold, deliberately hostile. Like the atmosphere in her mother's house where she never knew the right thing to do or say or remember what the rules were.What were the rules and when did they change? (Morrison 78).

Bride laments his brutality, asking "how could he? Why would he leave her stripped of all comfort, emotional security?" (79). Bride has characteristics of borderline personality disorder (BPD), as seen by her response to Booker's abandonment. Her initial views lack confidence.

> "What? I'm not exciting enough? Or pretty enough? I can't have thoughts of my own? Do things he doesn't approve of? When I heard the door slam I wondered for a split second if he was not just ending our silly argument, but ending us, our relationship. Couldn't be," (8)

"By morning soon as I woke up I was furious. Glad he was gone because clearly he was just using me since I had money and a crotch. I was so angry. I was so angry" (8). Bride explains how his sudden departure affected her, the hurtful words he spoke and the emotions they awoke. "How he hit me harder than a fist with six words: You not the woman I want. How they rattled me so I agreed with them. So stupid"(10).

It is obvious how much Booker's abandonment has affected her: "I can't keep thinking about him. And I'm stir-crazy slouching around these rooms. Too much light, too much space, too lonely" (Morrison 38). But Booker actually deserts Bride after she announces her choice to make amends with Sofia—a reunion that, given his grief stemming from the death of his brother due to comparable crimes, he finds incomprehensible. According to Butchart, a child's health, survival, development, or

dignity in the context of a relationship of responsibility, trust, or power may be harmed by any of the following: "child abuse or maltreatment constitutes all forms of physical and/or emotional ill-treatment, sexual abuse, neglect or negligent treatment, or commercial or other exploitation" (Butchart et al. 9).

Bride tells Booker all she suffered as a child.“She recalled an exchange she once had with Booker. Complaining about her mother, she told him that Sweetness hated her for her black skin”(Morrison 143). She is calmed by Booker's understanding and thoughtfulness. ‘It’s just a color,’ Booker had said. ‘A genetic trait – not a flaw, not a curse, not a blessing nor a sin" (143).

Bride is left feeling completely devastated by Booker's sudden departure, which sets up a series of old fears and emotions. As Bride battles thoughts of rejection and abandonment, it is clear how deeply hurt she is, reflecting the humiliation and abuse she endured as a child and which still haunts her. Morrison deftly illustrates how Bride's mental state was profoundly affected by Booker's leaving, showing how the lack of a comforting presence can shatter even the toughest exterior. In the face of emotional devastation and desertion, Bride must face her inner demons and find the fortitude to restore herself as she makes her way through this turbulent time.

The voyage that Bride takes to Whisky is a turning point in her pursuit of both bodily and mental health. It marks the end of her turbulent past and the beginning of her path towards self-discovery. Bride experiences a deep metamorphosis that reshapes her identity and puts her on a road towards strength and reconciliation as she works through the intricacies of her previous traumas and faces her inner demons. Morrison depicts Bride's trip to Whisky as a metaphorical journey of self-redemption and catharsis by deftly fusing aspects of psychological depth and magical realism.

According to Ramirez, Morrison "sees a hopeful future in Bride's mothering as a potential site of empowerment of children" in the face of racism (and sexism) (Ramirez 12). Bride rejects the flimsiness of capitalist concepts and has a greater grasp of motherhood in the country as a consequence. The route to empowerment that Bride takes at the end of her journey implies that the black community is also going to experience empowerment. The fact that has been written about

> Half a dozen or so houses on both sides of a gravel road that led to a stretch of trailers and mobile homes. Parallel to the road beyond a stretch of sorrowful-looking trees ran a deep but narrow stream. The houses had no addresses but some mobile homes had names painted on sturdy mailboxes. (Morrison 142)

Its final reconciliation and Bride's journey into the woods to find Booker take up almost the whole of the third and the fourth portions. As Herman puts it, "restoring the connection between survivors and their community and reconstructing the trauma story" is reflected in the resolution of the two main traumatised characters, which represents the last two stages of recovery (14). Amid this supposedly true fictional universe, Morrison juxtaposes the chronotope of the road with the fairy-tale legendary alteration in Bride's physical appearance, both of which reflect Bride's perplexed feelings over her vanishing identity. Notably, Booker was also going through an identity crisis at this time, thus he decides to return to Bride “Come on, honey. Who says they have streets in a town called Whiskey?" his birthplace (Morrison 75).

Upon the breakup with Booker, Bride remarkably notices an abrupt, inexplicable physical transformation that transports her back to her adolescent years.

Along with other charmed changes, Bride notices that her pubic hair disappears, her breasts flatten and her ear piercings disappear:

> Although there were no more physical disappearances, she was disturbed by the fact that she'd had no menstrual period for at least two, maybe three, months. Flat-chested and without underarm or pubic hair, pierced ears and stable weight, she tried and failed to forget what she believed was her crazed transformation back into a scared little black girl. (14)

Bride's extraordinary physical transformations are closely related to her identity quest. Bride was obliged to give up her flashy, materialistic surroundings and possessions, along with her haughty femininity—a quality she continued to value in her career. Bride is deprived of her car, lavish lifestyle, and arrogant belief that she is a successful businesswoman as soon as she embarks on her journey. This element of magical realism is combined with the chronotope of the road that leads to an unidentified location. Morrison skillfully employs these two narrative methods to position Bride and Booker for their eventual reunion and full recovery from their traumatic experiences: Both of them require release from their traumatic pasts and removal from the world's consumerism.

Bride's trip to Whisky represents her pursuit of both mental and physical recovery as she faces her previous demons and sets out on a life-changing search for self-awareness. Morrison skillfully uses storytelling to transform Bride's experience into a potent metaphor for the human spirit's ability to persevere in the face of tragedy and misfortune. Bride, having successfully traversed the twisting paths of her inner terrain, comes out stronger and healthier, prepared to accept the entirety of who she is and take back control of her life. Amid the ghosts of her past and the hope of a fresh

start, Bride finds comfort, atonement, and the courage to pave her route ahead in Whisky.

In the first and second sections of *God Help the Child*, Sofia Huxley recalls her horrific fifteen years of imprisonment spent in the women's jail "Decagon" following her conviction for abuse of children. This is told in two homodiegetic narrative chapters. The fact that Sofia and her cellmate "Julia," who was incarcerated for "smothering her disabled daughter," were "at the bottom of the heap" of criminals because "hurting little children was their [the guards] idea of the lowest of the low" (Morrison 67, 66). Born into a deeply devout family, Sofia was particularly disciplined by her mother for things she can't even recall today. As a result, Sofia "couldn't wait to get out of Mommy's house and marry the first man who asked" (76). It is significant to note that both Bride's and Sofia's mothers mistreated their children by abandoning or abusing them and that in both instances, the children fled as soon as they could. Sofia is appreciative to Bride for relieving her psychological anguish since her narrative monologue has a cathartic or restorative effect:

> For the first time after all those years, I cried. Cried and cried and cried until I fell asleep….that black girl did do me a favor. Not the foolish one she had in mind, not the money she offered, but the gift that neither of us planned: the release of tears unshed for fifteen years. No more bottling up. No more filth. Now I am clean and able. (70)

Morrison illuminates Booker's psyche, which was severely impacted by the horrible child abuse that tormented, disfigured, and murdered his brother, by

dedicating the third section of the novel to the omniscient narrative voice. Booker had a pessimistic outlook on life as a result of this heterodiegetic posture, and all he did at college was "sneer, laugh, dismiss, find fault [and] demean" (Morrison 121).

Felicity makes a snide remark about Booker being "Batman," but it turns out that this is a fitting description of him because he has made it his goal to protect children from abusers (129). Booker frequently exhibits violent and/or impulsive emotional reactions since he lost his sibling in such a terrible murder. But Booker only displays his impulsive behaviour as a way of defending defenceless offspring from potential predators. This clarifies the meaning of Morrison's opening in part four of the novel and her descriptive remarks about Booker:

> Blood stained his knuckles and his fingers began to swell. The stranger he'd been beating wasn't moving anymore or groaning […]. He'd left the beaten man's jeans open and his penis exposed just the way it was when he first saw him at the edge of the campus playground. Only a few faculty children were near the slide and one was on the swing. None apparently had noticed the man licking his lips and wavering his little white gristle towards them. (109)

Because Booker had assumed Bride was "sucked up to a monster" the final discourse of reconciliation also helps Booker rectify his misinterpretation of Bride's visit to Sofia (153). Because his brother was "murdered by a freak, a predator like the one I thought you were forgiving" (Morrison 154). Booker tells Bride the reason he fled. Bride acknowledges, "I lied! I lied! I lied! She was innocent. I helped convict her […]. "look at me with proud eyes, for once" (153). The burden of their painful history of child abuse was released as a result of their reconciliation with one another. This included their loss of feelings of affection, their observation of the mistreatment

of other children, and their coerced fear of being punished for disclosing "things that happened, why we did things, thought things, took actions that were really about what went on when we were just children" (Morrison 155).

Bride feels "newly born" after confessing her childhood trauma and not having to be "forced to relive, no outlive the disdain of her mother and the abandonment of her father" (162). Additionally, when Bride realises the return of the "tiny holes" in her earlobes and the "magical return of her flawless breasts", the miraculous metamorphosis in her body and the recovery of her femininity comes to an end (169, 166). The eventual revelation of Bride's pregnancy to Booker signals the end of their long-lasting pain from child abuse. Lastly, they make the following commitment to their child, which they were devoid of: "A child. A new life. Immune to evil or illness, protected from kidnap, beatings, rape, racism, insult, hurt, self-loathing, abandonment. Error-free. All goodness. Minus wrath" (175).

Morrison's Unique Narrative Techniques

The narrative skill of Toni Morrison in *God Help the Child* is an excellent example of how to use postmodernist narrative strategies masterfully. Morrison's narrative style crosses conventional authorial bounds, placing her at the intersection of the African-American and feminist movements and drawing readers into a complex network of experiences and viewpoints. By utilising a combination of interactive polyphony, switching narrative focal points and magical realism, Morrison skilfully explores trauma, namely child abuse in the African-American community. Morrison uses distinct storytelling strategies, emphasising the interaction between heterodiegetic and homodiegetic voices, magical realism and thematic connection with the phases of trauma rehabilitation.

The renowned aphorism "ars est celare Artem" (art is the concealing of art) perfectly captures Toni Morrison's postmodernist storytelling method in *God Help the Child*. For the most part, Morrison relies on the dialogical polyphonic consonance between the heterodiegetic and homodiegetic narrative voices of the novel's major and supporting cast members to support her postmodernist authorial stance. As part of the effort to universalise those individuals' shared experiences of severe child abuse, magical realism is employed, but it also intentionally avoids making clear references to any particular time or location, adding to the narrative's cryptic aura.

There are four sections in the novel *God Help the Child*. Each section comprises successive narrative sections that switch between the heterodiegetic (omniscient) authorial voice and the homodiegetic (first-person) storyteller's perspective of several characters. This is done to prepare the audience for the revelation of the two main characters' i.e Bride and Booker and the history of horrific child abuse. By illustrating the changes in the lives of these two major characters, this alternation combines with the changing of narrative foci through its many characters.

Notably, the events in *God Help the Child*—the victim's cathartic disclosure of the traumatic past, the remembering, and the establishment of trust in an untrustworthy society—coincide with what Herman refers to as "The Fundamental Stages of Recovery," which are essentially "reconstructing the trauma story, restoring the connection between survivors and their community, and establishing [of] safety" (Herman 14). Nine narrative sections make up the novel's first section, which is narrated in dramatic succession by Sweetness, Bride, and Brooklyn, Bride's co-worker. The aforementioned narrative consequence is reiterated twice, culminating in

Sofia's account of her encounter with child abuse and the devastating impact it had on her life.According to Herman, "restoring a sense of meaning in the world requires sharing the traumatic experience with others" (51). Morrison's polyphonic shifts between Sweetness's and Bride's storytelling in the initial section of *God Help the Child* seek to expose the horrors of child abuse by oscillating simultaneously between the daughter's cathartic recollection, which is only possible when Booker is present, and the mother's regret.

The novel's opening monologue by Sweetness goes into further detail on the horrendous neglectful acts she perpetrated on her child as a mother. "More so when they looked at Lula Ann and back at me—like I was cheating or something. Things got better but I still had to be careful. Very careful in". (Morrison 14)

In a storytelling schema that seeks to achieve a dialogic interacting plurality of awareness, where each character presents her homodiegetic perception of reality and the reader is free to accept a monologist heterodiegetic variant enforced by an omniscient author, the mother's monologue is followed by the daughter's."I could concentrate on the launch of YOU, GIRL and, equally important, keep a promise I'd made to myself long before I met him" (17). Morrison's ability to deftly transition between several character perspectives in "YOU, GIRL" demonstrates her distinctive storytelling abilities. Morrison deftly inserts narrative pauses—monologues from characters like Brooklyn and Sofia—while the protagonist concentrates on the debut of her idea. Morrison explores sensitive subjects like trauma and child abuse in their storylines, adding a variety of perspectives and nuances to the narrative. These devices show Morrison's skill at capturing the complexities of the human experience

while also making the story more complicated. Sweetness states frequently, "I wasn't a bad mother"(Morrison 43). She acknowledges that she feels horrible about how she "treated Lula Ann when she was little," but she says right away that she had "to protect her. She didn't know the world" (41). In her repentant monologue, Sweetness discusses how racism impacted black children's lives, particularly when it came from white peers. She states:

> I once saw a girl nowhere near as dark as Lula Ann and who couldn't be more than ten year old tripped by one of a group of white boys and when she fell and tried to scramble up another one put his foot on her behind and knocked her flat again …See if I hadn't trained Lula Ann properly she wouldn't have known to always cross the street and avoid white boys. (41)

Except for a couple of homodiegetic narrative pauses by Brooklyn and Sweetness, whose concluding monologue serves as the novel's starting point, the third and fourth parts of the novel are both written in the third-person narrative voice. To employ additional narrative devices like magical realism and chronotopic encounters, Morrison decided to devote half of the narrative discourse in *God Help the Child* to the omniscience of the heterodiegetic speaker.

After splitting up with Booker and leaving her flat after the encounter with Sofia, Bride feels the breakdown of the strong, independent persona she had built: "With him gone out of my life and out of my flat I could concentrate on the launch of YOU, GIRL" (17). It is significant to remember that this is the turning point in the narrative structure of *God Help the Child*, as Morrison switches to the perspective of a heterodiegetic narrator as Bride starts to lose her identity and, therefore, her narrative voice assumes the role of a focaliser and storyteller.

In addition to demonstrating Toni Morrison's skill of postmodernist storytelling, her narrative approaches in *God Help the Child* offer an in-depth examination of trauma and resiliency. Morrison challenges established ideas of authorship and narrative authority by deftly fusing a variety of voices and points of view to create a complex tapestry of everyday life. Morrison gives readers a poignant analysis of the long-lasting effects of trauma and the ability of narrative to promote healing and bonding. *God Help the Child* is testimony to Morrison's extraordinary talent for illuminating the routes toward recovery and salvation while adeptly capturing the nuances of the human experience.

Strong literary tropes like metaphor and symbolism are employed to portray complex feelings and experiences. These literary devices help to present in a better manner the state of mind that the characters are going through in the traumatic setting. The way that symbolism and metaphor are used in *God Help the Child* is essential to illustrating Booker's anguish after his brother Adam is killed. The metaphor of the flowers on Adam's coffin and the symbolism of Booker's shoulders illustrate how these literary strategies support the depiction of pain.

There are deeper symbolic meanings associated with the pictures of Booker's shoulders and the roses on Adam's coffin. Booker's perfect family life never goes back to how it was. Thus, there were no more family gatherings, dialogues or trumpet performances by Adam's father following his murder. However, the family chooses to move on after months of sorrow, which breaks Booker's psychological foundation. Over time, Booker's capacity to forget and forgive grows, however he was still unable to get past the way his family had. "How could they pretend it was over? How could they forget and just go on? (117).

With Adam's murder, Booker lost his soul mate and was left all alone: "Adam’s death became his own life. I think it’s his only life” (147). Adam's killer, Mr Humboldt, was apprehended and condemned to death six years afterwards for the sexually explicit murder of six boys. His shoulders had their names, and the boys' severed tiny penises were discovered inside a decorated candy tin from his home. As Lopez notes in "Childhood Cuts Festered and Never Scabbed Over: The Abuse of Children in Toni Morrison's *God Help the Child”*, Booker's resentment had never subsided since he believed that the death of child rapists like Humboldt was "a too facile solution." (147)

Booker decided that getting a little rose tattooed on the left side of his shoulder would be a "calming solution," akin to the gesture he had made during his brother's burial when he laid a rose on his coffin. This symbolic move has psychological implications since it indicates that Booker has transferred the humiliating anguish of his brother's killer to himself, therefore deflecting his anger against Mr. Humboldt. "Was this the same chair the predator sat in, the same needle used on his paste-white skin?" the man even asks. (Morrison 120)

In literature, symbolism and metaphor are useful devices for illustrating trauma. Through the employment of these techniques, Toni Morrison delves deeply into the emotions of people such as Booker, who is struggling with his brother's death. Through the metaphor of the roses on Adam's coffin and the symbolism of Booker's shoulders, trauma is explored in great detail, enabling readers to empathise with the characters and learn more about their experiences. Morrison uses these literary techniques to give her representation of pain more nuance and depth, which transforms the book into a moving examination of human suffering and resilience.

Morrison offers insights into the intricacies of individual lives, feelings, and relationships through a variety of narrative voices. These many points of view—from Sweetness's self-disclosure to Bride's memories of her past—give viewers a complex picture of the character's internal conflict and the lingering repercussions of trauma. To dive into the complex layers of pain and to give a comprehensive representation of the characters' journeys towards recovery and self-discovery, this study examines how Morrison uses different viewpoints.

Indeed, Sweetness's self-revelation reveals her as the main reason behind Bride's horrific early life. She further aggravates this by acknowledging that she has used racism against her child. Her last remarks in this section, "It's not my fault", highlight the psychological strain of raising a child whose skin tone is less desirable than her own in a culture that actively discriminates against and destroys individuals based only on the colour of their skin (Morrison 7).

Bride uses a homodiegetic narrative voice for the opening section of the text. A gap of twenty-three years exists between the narratives of Bride and Sweetness. Bride gives the reader a peek into her life as a prosperous entrepreneur at the age of twenty through her narration. Multiple viewpoints are a key narrative device used by the Morrison to reveal layers of pain. The novel's first section is told in Bride's homodiegetic narrative voice, giving readers a glimpse into her thoughts and feelings. The twenty-three-year gap between Sweetness's and Bride's narrations emphasises the passage of time as well as the changes in situations and personalities. This viewpoint makes it possible to comprehend Bride's journey, her challenges and her successes on a deeper level. Morrison skilfully conveys the intricacies of Bride's tragedy and its

lingering effects on her life by alternating between many narrative voices and historical periods.

After her breakup with Booker, Bride discovers that the security of her financial wealth is hollow and untrustworthy, and she embarks on the dangerous path of self-reconciliation that leads to the second stage of remembering and grief. Bride's confused emotional condition following Booker's departure is conveyed in her first-person narrative voice. Bride had several partners, but she never felt emotionally fulfilled in her sexual life. She claims that all of her past boyfriends were "waiting for my crotch or my pay check like an allowance"; and that her promiscuity relationships were similar to "Diet Coke—deceptively sweet minus nutrition" (Morrison 36).

It is interesting to see how Brooklyn's first-person narrative breaks illuminate Bride and Booker's characters. The story of Bride and Booker's first chance meeting at a dance party is revealed through her monologues. Despite never having met before, an instant physical affinity developed between them. Brooklyn declares,

> You just don't grab somebody from behind like that unless you know them. But she didn't mind at all. She let him squeeze her, rub up against her and she didn't know a thing about him….She liked the sex. Addicted to it and believe me I know. (Morrison 58).

Brooklyn tells us about Booker's promiscuous past, so when Brooklyn takes advantage of his being by himself in Bride's bed, he does not mind kissing her. That being said, she retracts his rude sarcasm, "Between kisses, I whispered, "Don't you want another flower in your garden?" He said, "Are you sure you know what makes a garden grow?" "Sure do," I said. "Tenderness." "And dung," he answered (59-60).

Bride encounters Rain, a runaway teenager, in the forest with her foster hippie parents. Like the other people that make up Bride's and Booker's social circles, Rain too had experienced the pain of being abused as a youngster. Rain was pushed into child prostitution by her mother, a prostitute, and had to flee. Following Rain biting a frequent customer on whom she was made to carry out oral coitus, the mother threw Rain out. In an attempt to make amends, the mother "gave back his twenty-dollar bill and made me stand outside" (101). She never gave her access again. Rain needed to understand "what kinds of people would give you money and what for" in addition to "where sleep was safe" (102-103). Evelyn and Steve gave her the nickname "Rain" after they saw her waiting by herself at the Salvation Army truck stop on a wet night.

By employing a variety of viewpoints in *God Help the Child* Toni Morrison dexterously reveals the many traumas that the individuals have endured, providing readers with a complex tapestry of feelings, encounters and connections. Every narrative voice in the novel, from Sweetness's admission to Bride's musings, gives the work depth and complexity while highlighting the significant effects of trauma on particular lives. Morrison reflects on the intricacies of identity and resilience, to identify with the hardships of the many characters, and think about the ways that trauma defines and moulds by letting readers experience the stories through their eyes.

Toni Morrison uses language to great effect in her novel *God Help the Child*, both in expressing the emotional anguish of the characters and helping them on their paths to recovery and reconciliation. Morrison deftly exposes the layers of suffering that characters such as Bride and Booker have endured through a complex web of

narrative voices and artistic decisions. Morrison transports readers to an environment where words serve as a means of comprehension, empathy, and eventually transformation by delving into the many intricacies of language and its capacity to convey suffering.

Interweaving Gender, Race, and Traumatic Experience

The narrative explores the intricate relationships of gender, racism, and traumatic experience and how they significantly affect the protagonists' identities and paths to recovery. Another noteworthy feature of the novel is the intersectionality of gender and race. The novel examines how the lives of the characters and their self-perception are impacted by systematic racism. The story explores the wider effects of racism, demonstrating how victims of racism can internalise it and use it as justification to inflict further abuse on others. This internalisation of prejudice feeds the discriminatory cycle even more.

The novel also explores the morality of interdependence as a therapeutic strategy. Morrison emphasises the need for community support and solidarity in healing trauma by examining a variety of resistance tactics within an ethic of interdependence. While navigating the depths of their traumas, the novel’s protagonists find resilience as well as healing in their relationships with others.

The novel questions cultural myths and provides a nuanced knowledge of the complexity of identity and healing through its examination of gender, ethnicity and traumatising events. It is an effective reminder of the long-lasting effects that trauma may have on people as well as of the possibility of development and perseverance in the face of difficulty. Ultimately, the novel weaves together issues of gender, ethnicity and traumatic experience to produce an engaging story that highlights the challenges

and resilience of its characters. By delving into these subjects, the novel provides a thorough analysis of identity, recovery, and the social influences that mould people's lives.

The complex ways in which gender, race and trauma intersect are shaped by the norms of society. “I behave and behave and behave” emphasises how the narrator, is under pressure to live up to societal norms that dictate obedience and conformity, which are frequently gendered standards placed on women (Morrison 41). It discusses the challenge of negotiating gender-based norms and expectations in society.

Bride’s statement “Neither one hugged me but they smiled at me” emphasises how, despite the grownups' verbal support, the protagonist never receives any physical comfort or affection from society (40). It points out gender expectations and conventions, which frequently restrict physical touch for specific gender roles or relationships.In another instance, Bride muses, “For a while, anyway, until my sex life became sort of like Diet Coke—deceptively sweet minus nutrition”(44). Here, she reflects on how gender norms and cultural expectations might affect intimate relationships and psychological fulfilment as she talks about her encounters with physical intimacy and relationships. Gender, race and interpersonal connections intersect to shape experiences of love and affection.

The name ‘Bride’ itself reflects social expectations placed on women, it has associations with purity and femininity. Morrison examines how relationships, perceptions of oneself, and the recovery process are impacted by gender through Bride's encounters. Cultural expectations and conventions impact Bride's encounters

and relationships. The protagonist's experience of traumais intricately linked to gender dynamics, mirroring larger societal norms and hierarchies of power.

In addition, the protagonist's name implies that she would constantly dress in white, a colour which contrasts sharply with her skin tone. The protagonist appeals to the world of men by shortening her full name from Lula Ann Bridewell to Bride, which highlights her natural attractiveness. Booker, her boyfriend, is the source of Bride's other names. "He called me “baby‟ most of the time... And sometimes "You my girl,‟ accent on the my" (4). In a patriarchal sense, Booker's name implies that Bride is something that belongs to him.

The anticipation of gendered stigma and ridicule further illustrates the additional burdens placed on women who experience trauma, as Bride navigates the potential for victim-blaming and societal scrutiny. Bride's reliance on her friend Brooklyn for support emphasizes the importance of female solidarity and the role of female friendships in coping with trauma. However, Brooklyn's intervention also reflects gendered dynamics of support and caregiving, positioning her as the nurturer expected to help Bride overcome her trauma. The revelation of Bride's encounter with a female assailant disrupts traditional narratives of gendered violence, highlighting the complexity of interpersonal relationships and the potential for women to perpetrate harm against one another. Brooklyn's reaction further explores gendered power dynamics and expectations surrounding victimhood and culpability, reflecting societal norms that position women as passive victims or perpetrators.

"I can't explain it to you but I do know when it started." (Morrison 25) Bride's internal battle to express her feelings is a prevalent feature of trauma that affects people of all ages. It draws attention to how complicated her emotional condition is

and how hard it is for her to communicate her feelings. "Glad he was gone because clearly he was just using me since I had money and a crotch" reveal the power struggles in Bride's relationship and her sense of being taken advantage of (25). It demonstrates how gender dynamics affects her sense of her value and agency, especially in light of cultural norms and prejudices about the worth of women.

Race plays a major role significantly influencing Bride and her experiences. Bride struggles with cultural norms, racial prejudice, and the nuances of her own racial identity throughout the story. Bride's identity becomes apparent through a series of interactions and introspections which are intricately linked to her race and her surroundings. The upbringing of Bride by her mother Sweetness serves as an example of how race shapes a person's identity from a young age. Sweetness's preference for practical skills over Bride's education is indicative of the cultural norms that prioritise survival above academic accomplishment for the African Americans. Because of her early training, Bride follows a path that is influenced by her race, which affects her possibilities and choices.

Bride's identity is further shaped by the racial prejudice and objectification she experiences while navigating the world. Even while she occasionally receives admiring attention, it is tainted by the legacy of fetishization and racist beauty standards. These encounters shape Bride's perception of who she is and where she fits in the world, emphasising the ubiquitous impact of race on the development of her identity. In addition, Bride's body changes in reaction to gendered and ethnic stereotypes. Her purposeful alteration in gait betrays an intentional attempt to negotiate social expectations and claim control over her body in racially and gendered

environments. This adaption highlights how Bride's identity and experiences are shaped by the intersections of race and gender. Race also has an impact on Bride's love connections, especially with Booker. Booker's arrival upends Bride's perception of males in her life and suggests a deeper level of understanding and connection between them that goes beyond simple physical desire. Their relationship shows how racism affects interpersonal connections and intimacy in a big way for Bride.

Bride's encounters with gender and racial background have shaped her appearance and body, as she modifies her actions to avoid social criticism and expectations. "I began to move differently—not a strut, not that pelvis-out rush of the runway—but a stride, slow and focused." (Morrison 44). “I became a deep dark beauty who doesn’t need Botox for kissable lips or tanning spas to hide a deathlike pallor”(58). Bride's understanding of her own racial identity and the importance she attaches to it are evident in the above remarks. Bride cherishes her "deep dark" skin and views it as a source of pride instead of anything to be altered or concealed, despite social pressure to adhere to specific standards of beauty standards "Coon. Topsy. Clinkertop. Sambo. Ooga booga. Ape sounds and scratching of the sides, imitating zoo monkeys." (59) These disparaging remarks and behaviours aimed against Bride are a reflection of the prejudice based on race that she encounters from an early age. They show how her encounters and the development of her identity have been shaped by the way that race has been used as a weapon to dehumanise and denigrate her.

Bride may have experienced racial pain in the past, but she has used it as an indicator of strength and achievement in her adult life, indicating the deep influence race has had on her identity. She says, "I sold my elegant blackness to all those childhood ghosts and now they pay me for it… I have to say, forcing those

tormentors—the real ones and others like them—to drool with envy when they see me is more than payback. It’s glory." (Morrison 58) Bride's perseverance and pride in her racial background are shown by her joy in arousing jealousy in those who formerly mistreated her. She has overcome all obstacles to come out on top and appears to be confident in her abilities, which suggests that her race has had a big influence on how she feels about herself and how powerful she is.

People frequently struggle with the intricate interaction between agency and disempowerment while navigating their feelings and reactions in the face of racial trauma. Bride faces and manages the after-effects of racial trauma. She exemplifies empowerment—the process of regaining control and confidence in one's abilities—as well as agency—the ability to act and make decisions. Bride's agency and empowerment are demonstrated in several ways throughout the novel, showing her tenacity and will to take charge of her situation. One example of this is when, following a horrific event, Bride decides to put her safety and privacy first by refusing to involve police authorities and instead seeks care on her own. Her agency in negotiating the trauma's aftermath is shown in her firm and practical response. Moreover, Bride's involvement in self-expression and individual fashion choices is a sign of empowerment and autonomy in reaction to racial trauma. She counteracts the disempowering consequences of previous traumas by reclaiming her feeling of agency and asserting her uniqueness through her fashion choices and looks.

Bride also emphasises her agency in creating her own story and taking back control of her identity through her encounters with the reality of her past and her admission of personal issues. Bride expresses her agency by facing the truth of her circumstance and accepting it, defying the social temptation to fit into victimisation narratives. Bride has difficulties along the way to empowerment and independence.

Her thoughts on drug misuse and the reappearance of distressing memories demonstrate the persistent influence of previous trauma on her sense of self-determination, highlighting the difficulties involved in the endeavour of recovery and regaining agency. In response to racial trauma, Bride has to balance social expectations, personal challenges, and the legacy of past traumas while navigating the complexities of agency and empowerment. Her method is demonstrated in these lines. "I have what I've worked for and am good at it. I'm proud of myself, I really am, but it's the Vicodin and the hangover that make me keep remembering some not-so-proud junk in the past" (Morrison 55).

Bride stands out as a poignant example of how individuals might combine empowerment and liberty to respond to racial anguish. Through her actions, ideas, and struggles, Bride shows how to navigate the challenges of reclaiming her identity and taking charge in the face of disaster. Her story serves as a reminder of the strength needed to face and conquer racial trauma, in addition to the continual process of empowerment and healing that accompanies it.

Toni Morrison's *God Help the Child* offers a thorough examination of racial identity and childhood trauma in America. The novel provides a devastating depiction of the lingering consequences of childhood trauma and the challenges of negotiating racial identity in a society characterized by institutional racism and inequality through the eyes of the young heroine, Bride. Morrison's story adeptly explores the interconnections of trauma, gender, and racism, shedding light on the ways that larger social forces impact individual lives. Fundamentally, *God Help the Child* is a celebration of the human spirit's ability to persevere in the face of extreme hardship. The larger themes of self-discovery, forgiveness and the pursuit of redemption in the midst of a heritage of suffering and injustice are reflected in Bride's journey from

trauma to healing. Readers are exposed to the brutal facts of racism and its significant effects on both individual and societal identity through her eyes.

Morrison's story is firmly anchored in the socio-historical background of African Americans, a past characterised by racial injustice, segregation and slavery. Through the juxtaposition of Bride's personal experiences with the broader backdrop of racial oppression, the novel underscores the manner in which systematic injustice shapes individual lives. The novel sheds light on the ongoing effects of trauma in African-American communities and the intricacies of racial relations through Bride's encounters with individuals from a variety of backgrounds.

Morrison captures the intricacies of the human experience in *God Help the Child* with lyrical writing and nuanced characterisations that are among the novel's most remarkable features. Through her use of narrative style, Morrison challenges readers to bear witness to the suffering and resilience of a people whose voices have been ignored and muted, highlighting the transformational power of storytelling in facing and transcending tragedy.

Chapter 7

Comparative Analysis: Cross Cultural Perspectives on Childhood Trauma

The preceding chapters undertook a detailed examination of the narratives of trauma selected for study with each chapter analysing each text independently and in depth. This chapter endeavours to undertake a comparative study of the novels *The Kite Runner, Atonement, Cracking India, Beasts of No Nation* and *God Help the Child*. Such an analysis is carried out to determine the narrative and thematic resemblances and variations among these novels and to establish links between personal traumatic experiences and the wider socio-cultural milieu. Such a comparative approach is adopted to secure a deeper understanding of the ways in which trauma literature both reflects and influences one's perceptions of the human condition.

An in-depth analysis of the five novels uncovers guilt, atonement and resilience as recurring themes throughout all of the narratives. The first part of this chapter examines the progression and manifestation of these recurring themes in each of the five novels. This is followed by a comparative analysis of the narrative techniques employed in the texts chosen for study. The subsequent section of the chapter sets out to explore the commonalities and differences brought out by the specific cultural setting of these texts. The chapter closes with an examination of the theoretical and practical implications of literary studies on trauma for the discipline of trauma studies. It also takes a look at how trauma studies can be enriched with the study of literary narratives.

Thematic Comparison

The theme of guilt permeates *The Kite Runner*. The novel explores the psychological and emotional burdens that individuals carry as a result of their past transgressions. Through Amir's account, the novel illustrates the crippling nature of guilt, as Amir grapples with the weight of his betrayal of Hassan. Amir suffers from intense feelings of guilt and regret as a result of his inability to step in and protect Hassan from a vicious sexual assault by Assef. His sense of guilt grows as he sees the results of his passivity which eventually leads to Hassan's terrible demise at the hands of the Taliban. The novel highlights the ways in which guilt can manifest as a pervasive sense of shame, regret and self-loathing, ultimately hindering an individual's ability to form meaningful connections with others and find personal redemption. All the same, Amir's intense sense of guilt drives him to seek atonement and the novel underscores the transformational potential of owning up the mistakes made in the past and making amends for the wrongdoing.

Likewise, the theme of guilt pervades the narrative of *Atonement.* Briony Tallis is haunted by the guilt of her false testimony, which leads to the imprisonment and subsequent war experiences of her sister's lover, Robbie Turner. Briony's unfounded accusation alters the trajectory of the lives of numerous people around her. This has permanent repercussions on Briony and her sense of remorse is exacerbated by her incapacity to fully comprehend the consequences of her actions as a child. This leads to a lifelong struggle to atone for her mistakes. To penalise herself for her mistake, Briony rejects an offer to attend the University of Cambridge. Instead she

chooses to be a nurse, which is a challenging profession to pursue especially during the war. Through her writing of the novel, Briony attempts to exonerate Robbie and seek forgiveness for her misdeeds.

Cracking India uncovers the psychological and emotional toll of guilt on individuals, particularly children who are compelled to deal with the darker aspects of human nature during periods of political and religious conflict. Lenny's guilt is brought about by her inability to avert the abduction of her Ayah, Santha. It was Lenny's naivety that led to Ayah's capture. This leaves Lenny with a sense of responsibility and self-blame. In addition to being personal, Lenny's guilt also represents the collective guilt that Indian society felt at a turbulent time in its history. Lenny's inner turmoil highlights the deep effects of betrayal and the long-lasting wounds it causes in both individuals and communities.

The theme of guilt is central to Uzodinma Iweala's novel *Beasts of No Nation.* The protagonist Agu, a young boy forced to become a child soldier, grapples with immense guilt over the atrocities he commits during the civil war. However, the guilt and trauma of his actions haunt him, as he is forced to confront the humanity of his victims. Agu's youthful innocence is corrupted by the violence he experiences and perpetrates. While Agu is a victim of circumstance, forced into combat, he is still culpable for the war crimes he commits. The theme of guilt highlights the moral complexity of Agu's situation and the lasting psychological damage inflicted on child soldiers. Ultimately, Agu's guilt drives him to seek redemption, as he expresses a desire to become a doctor and save lives to atone for his sins.

Bride, the central character in *God Help the Child*, struggles with a deep sense

of guilt for hastily and unfairly accusing Sofia Huxley as a child molester. Bride's testimony results in Sofia's imprisonment. Bride testifies against Sofia Huxley to earn her mother's favour and love. The guilt of her false testimony haunts Bride into her adulthood. The weight of her guilt is compounded by her realisation of the devastating impact her lie has had on Sofia's life. Throughout the narrative, Bride's path is characterised by her endeavour to reconcile herself with her previous deeds, striving for redemption and self-awareness. This internal battle encompasses not only the act of making amends for the harm done to Sofia, but also the process of directly facing and addressing Bride's underlying fears and her strong desire for affirmation that compelled her to deceive. Morrison examines the concepts of forgiveness, self-awareness, and the enduring impact of childhood traumas, demonstrating how Bride's first act of betrayal and later sorrow influence her sense of self and her connections with others. The intricate nature of Bride's culpability highlights the novel's overarching exploration of the interconnectedness between individual and systemic injustices, resulting in enduring wounds that transcend time.

Nancy Sherman has categorised survivor's guilt into two distinct types: subjective and objective. These categories are closely linked to the individual's felt responsibility and guilt associated to their participation. Subjective guilt, as she explains, is characterised as 'irrational' and is associated with a sense of obligation. This type of guilt is experienced even in the absence of any wrongdoing or misguided actions. The basis of this emotional pain is in the creation of inconsistent and unsubstantiated self-judgments, for which one is not even held responsible (Sherman 185-191). This concept aligns with Nietzsche's assertion of "consciousnesss or awareness of guilt" wherein individuals experience feelings of guilt despite their

actions not causing harm to others(39). Although survivors are conscious of their non-judgmental stance, those experiencing guilt struggle to release their ‘if only’ thoughts and alleviate their misery. Even though Lenny’s act brought about enormous misery to Ayah, Lenny’s guilt, though not entirely, can to a certain extent be bracketed as subjective guilt for she was not driven by an ulterior erroneous personal motive.

An individual is considered accountable and culpable of a malevolent act of repulsion that was carried out with deliberate intent. Nancy Sherman argues that objective or reasonable guilt is directly linked to one's conduct and appropriately reflects genuine wrongdoing or culpability. This type of guilt is acceptable because it is the direct outcome of a situation where one deliberately harms someone or fails to prevent harm despite having the ability to do so. Amir’s, Briony’s and Bride’s guilt are all instances of this objective or reasonable guilt.

The different representations of guilt in these novels underline the multifaceted nature of this emotion; guilt can be both a source of psychological misery as well as a stimulus for personal growth and redemption. The experience of guilt serves as catalyst for personal growth and redemption by prompting the individuals to confront the abyss of their own moral failure. Confronting and recognising one’s ethical transgressions enables an individual to rediscover his or her moral agency to strive for a more virtuous existence. Guilt, therefore leads to redemption. The ensuing section looks at how the characters ravaged by guilt redeem their wrongful acts.

Amir spends much of his adult life seeking redemption. His cowardice in not helping Hassan and later in betraying Hassan to win Baba’s love all for himself continues to haunt Amir for years. Amir wins a kite-fighting event to please his father,

but this only makes him feel worse. As an adult, Amir learns that Hassan is his half-brother. This makes Amir's betrayal all the more painful. Years later, Amir is afforded the opportunity for redemption when he returns to Afghanistan to liberate Hassan's son Sohrab from the clutches of Assef. This perilous mission finally lets Amir atone for his past transgressions. *The Kite Runner* depicts redemption as a difficult but necessary path to pleasure and peace.

The theme of redemption is intricately woven through the narrative of *Atonement*. In an effort to atone for her past misdeeds, Briony, composes a novel that alters the course of events and results in a happy ending. This act of creative atonement functions as a metaphor for the futility of attempting to achieve redemption through art. The novel underscores the idea that, as creators, writers possess an absolute power over their fictional worlds, rendering them godlike figures. However, this divine authority is tempered by the understanding that there are no external judges or higher powers to grant forgiveness, leaving the novelist trapped in an existential limbo. McEwan critiques the concept of redemption in this investigation, positing that it is an unattainable objective, even for those who possess the power of creation.

Lenny bears witness to the horrors of the Partition of India and the violence that erupts between Hindus, Muslims and Sikhs. Her unintentional act of betraying Ayah, results in Ayah being abducted, raped and eventually forced into prostitution. Upon learning that Ayah is in Lahore, Lenny and Godmother manage to meet her, talk to her and on Ayah's request ensure that she is taken back to her hometown. Shanta continues to maintain her dignity and inner strength even in the most trying circumstances. Lenny's love and loyalty to Shanta provides a glimmer of hope and

humanity in the face of such inhumanity. Lenny's steadfast devotion to Shanta redeems her own traumatic experiences and allows her to find meaning amidst the senseless violence of Partition. Lenny is the embodiment of the fact that the human spirit can endure through the power of compassion, empathy and the bonds of friendship, even in the darkest of times. *Cracking India* ultimately posits that love and understanding between individuals can provide a path to redemption, even in the aftermath of unspeakable tragedy.

Redemption is a poignant and powerful element that underscores the narrative of *Beasts of No Nation*. The story of Agu, a child soldier, is marked by brutal violence and trauma, yet the novel ultimately offers a glimmer of hope and redemption. This redemptive arc is evident in the final chapters, where Agu, having escaped the clutches of the Commandant and his rebel forces, finds solace in a rehabilitation facility. There, he begins to heal physically and emotionally and resolves to be a doctor who saves lives, as a remedy for his past errors.

Redemption is a central concern in *God Help the Child*. The narrative explores the psychological and emotional journeys of the main characters, Bride and Booker, as they grapple with the traumatic experiences of their childhood. The redemptive arc of the novel centers on Bride's journey towards self-awareness and healing. Bride confronts the harm she has caused to Sofia Huxley and persists to amend her wrongdoings even at the risk of fallout with Booker. This process of self-reflection and acknowledgment allows Bride to start the long and arduous journey of redemption, which involves not only making up for her past wrongs but also learning to forgive herself and others. The novel delves into the complexities of healing and recovery and highlights the importance of confronting and processing past traumas in

order to achieve personal redemption.

An intricate web of internal and external factors come together to enable the individuals to successfully adapt and thrive despite terrible adversities. This resilience observed in individuals is based on the complex interplay of psychological, social, and cultural factors, which together enhance their capacity to manage and surmount obstacles. *The Kite Runner* explores the theme of resilience through Amir's journey from guilt and shame to redemption and personal growth. Amir's struggles to come to terms with his past and the harm he has caused serve as a testament to the human capacity for resilience in the face of adversity. Hassan's unflinching commitment and dedication to Amir, despite the injustice he encounters, serve as a strong testament to the resilience of the human spirit.

In *Atonement*, Briony Tallis, exemplifies resilience as she navigates the tumultuous landscape of her own psyche and the devastating consequences of her actions. Robbie persists during his imprisonment and during the Second World War to clear his name and reunite with Cecilia, despite physical and emotional hardships. His resilience is evident in his ability to maintain his love for Cecilia and hope for a future together.

Lenny, the young protagonist, in *Cracking India* is resilient in the face of the Partition of India and negotiates the tumultuous events surrounding Partition and the loss of her childhood innocence with fortitude. Her experiences demonstrate the power of human adaptability and growth in the face of adversity.

Beasts of No Nation depicts resilience through the character of Agu, a young boy who is coerced into participating in a civil war. Agu must acclimatise himself to

the harsh truths of warfare in order to stay alive. Despite the distressing and aggressive events he endures, Agu's ability to bounce back enables him to retain his moral values and preserve a feeling of optimism and self-respect in the midst of inconceivable challenges.

Bride's journey of self-discovery in *God Help the Child* exemplifies resilience in the midst of racial trauma and family dysfunction. Despite the weight of familial tragedy, Bride emerges as a figure of strength and empowerment, defying conventional expectations and reclaiming her story.

The recurrent themes of traumatised childhood found in the novels studied deepen one's awareness of human pain and resilience, transcending cultural barriers and highlighting universal features of trauma. Through these stories, one learns about the intricacies of childhood adversity, the transformational force of resilience and the ongoing quest for healing and redemption in the midst of personal and societal upheaval.

Narrative Styles

At its core, trauma literature reflects the complexities of portraying the indescribable, struggling with the inherent challenges of conveying the fundamental nature of traumatic events within the confines of a narrative. This paradoxical undertaking is characterised by the simultaneous necessity to communicate and the inherent inability to do so, as the traumatic encounter is beyond the limits of language and the human intellect. The situation becomes all the more intricate in narratives of childhood trauma, as the child narrator may very often not understand the magnitude or import of the occurrences. To articulate the significant influence of traumatic

events on the human psyche, authors employ different modes of storytelling. A comparative analysis of narrative styles in the novels selected for study reveals distinct storytelling approaches that enrich the depiction of traumatised childhood and improve one's participation with the emotional journey of the characters. Each author uses a unique narrative method to express the intricacies of trauma, memory and resilience.

The Kite Runner's first-person narrative allows readers to intimately delve into Amir's emotional journey, particularly his guilt and remorse over betraying his childhood friend Hassan. Such a narrative choice immerses the readers into Amir's inner conflicts, making his personal trauma palpable.The plot of the novel develops in two timelines, alternating between Amir's present-day observations and the vivid memories of his childhood in Afghanistan. Hosseini's use of flashback and introspection are effective in depicting Amir's mental agony. The weaving together of past and present events allows Hosseini to present powerfully the long-term impact of trauma on identity and relationships.

Atonement delves into the intricacies of memory and perception through an untrustworthy narrator, shifting perspectives and an elaborate temporal framework. The novel shifts between different narrators and time periods, blurring the lines between reality and fiction, which deeply impacts the portrayal of trauma. One of the most notable narrative techniques used by McEwan is the unreliable narrator. The perspectives of the narrator Briony shape the understanding of the readers. Her vivid imagination, however, makes her susceptible to misunderstandings; this generates a sense of ambiguity and casts doubts on the veracity of Briony's narration.

The narrative unreliability of Briony Tallis emphasises the subjectivity of

trauma and illustrates how personal perspectives influence the retelling of painful events. McEwan's narrative approaches call into doubt the reliability of recollection, as well as the intricacies of guilt and redemption, adding layers of complexity to the portrayal of childhood trauma.

McEwan also uses metafictional elements in the novel, to explore the power dynamics between authorship and reality. This complicates the portrayal of trauma. The revelation of Briony as the author of the novel within the novel adds another layer of complexity to the narrative, as it calls into question the reliability of storytelling itself. This metafictional twist forces the readers to reconsider everything that they have read, including Briony's motivations and the accuracy of her accounts. The narrative critiques the act of narration itself and emphasises the subjective nature of memory and its role in shaping individual and collective histories.

Bapsi Sidhwa's *Cracking India* employs a young narrator, Lenny Sethi, whose naive perspective provides a devastating window into the shattering of identity in the face of communal violence. This narrative choice is particularly effective in conveying the pervasive sense of trauma, as it juxtaposes the simplicity and naivety of a child's worldview with the complex and violent events she witnesses. Sidhwa's use of Lenny's first-person perspective is critical in showcasing the confusion and horror of Partition. Lenny's innocence and lack of complete understanding serve to highlight the irrationality and savagery of the violence. Her observations are often straightforward and devoid of the biases that adults might exhibit. This exposes the reader to confront the raw and unfiltered reality of the events.

Additionally, Sidhwa's prose often captures the fragmentation of reality that

accompanies trauma. Lenny's narrative is episodic, jumping between different events and memories, which mirrors the disjointed and often surreal experience of living through such a catastrophic period. This fragmentation is reflective of the psychological impact of trauma, where time can feel distorted and events can become a blur.

Uzodinma Iweala's *Beasts of No Nation* has a raw and uncensored narrative style. The narrative is distinguished by fractured syntax and visceral images. Agu's narration transports readers to the heart of war's horrors and portrays effectively the deterioration of childhood innocence in the face of brutality and survival. Iweala's narrative approaches create a sense of urgency and closeness while portraying the psychological impact of trauma on a sensitive protagonist. Iweala's use of non-standard English, characterised by its raw and unpolished grammar, mirrors Agu's voice and mindset. This linguistic choice underscores Agu's youth and his disrupted education, while also reflecting the disorientation and confusion that accompany his traumatic experiences.

The fragmented, stream-of-consciousness style further accentuates the theme of trauma. Agu's narrative often lacks a clear chronological order, blending past and present events in a manner that mimics the intrusive nature of traumatic memories. This technique effectively conveys how Agu's psyche is overwhelmed by his experiences, as he struggles to make sense of the constant violence around him. Iweala's vivid and often visceral descriptions of violence serve to underscore the brutal reality faced by child soldiers. Agu's recounting of violent encounters is marked by a stark, almost detached tone, which emphasises the numbing effect of continuous exposure to horror. This narrative style effectively communicates the

extent to which Agu is desensitised to violence, a common response among child soldiers as a means of psychological survival.

Toni Morrison's *God Help the Child* uses multiple perspectives and nonlinear narrative to draw attention on the intergenerational impact of racial trauma. Morrison's use of fragmented narratives and shifting perspectives emphasises the interconnectivity of personal and collective trauma. It illustrates how individual misfortune intersects with larger societal narratives of resilience and empowerment..

The novel's structure, characterised by a shifting first-person and third-person narrative, allows for a deep exploration of each character's inner world. This stylistic choice underscores the pervasive and lingering impact of trauma, demonstrating how it shapes identities and relationships. One of the key aspects of Morrison's narrative style is her use of multiple narrators. Each character provides his/ her own perspective, offering a fragmented but comprehensive view of the story. This multiplicity of voices reflects the fragmented nature of traumatic memory.

Morrison's narrative style also incorporates elements of magical realism, a hallmark of her writing. This technique allows her to depict trauma not just as a psychological phenomenon but as a tangible force that alters reality. For example, Bride's physical transformation—her sudden regression to a childlike state—serves as a powerful metaphor for the unresolved traumas of her past. This surreal element emphasises how deeply her childhood wounds affect her adult life.In addition, Morrison's use of dialogue and interior monologue provides insight into the characters' psyches, revealing how their past traumas shape their perceptions and interactions.

A comparative investigation of narrative styles used in primary texts reveals the diversity of the ways of in which stories of traumatised childhood are depicted across different cultural contexts. From parallel timelines and unreliable narration toinfantile views and visceral imagery, these narrative strategies deepen one's knowledge of the intricacies of trauma while at the same time emphasising the transformative power of storytelling in addressing and presenting childhood suffering. Authors use unique narrative strategies to expand one's empathy for the emotional journey of the characters.

Socio-Cultural Specificities

Cultural factors have a significant impact on the representation of trauma in literature. It impacts narrative viewpoints, thematic emphasis and the representation of the emotional landscape of the characters. Jeffrey C. Alexander, a prominent sociologist, has significantly shaped the discourse on cultural trauma. Alexander argues that cultural trauma occurs when members of a collective feel they have been subjected to a horrendous event that leaves indelible marks upon their group consciousness, marking their memories forever and changing their future identity in fundamental and irrevocable ways. For Alexander, trauma is not inherent in the events themselves but is constructed through discourse and representation, where cultural agents, such as media, intellectuals and political leaders, play a pivotal role in framing an event as traumatic and shaping collective memory (8-10).

The trauma encountered by the characters in *The Kite Runner* are significantly influenced by socio-political and cultural factors. Amir's early suffering is inextricably linked to Afghan traditional standards, such as honour, loyalty and societal expectations. The novel commences in the 1970s, a period of relative peace

and stability in Kabul. However, the lives of the characters are eternally altered by the looming shadows of political unrest. The Soviet Invasion and the ascension of the Taliban regime later on compel many Afghans to escape their homes and seek refuge abroad. Baba and Amir escape to America. Baba exemplifies a large group of Afghan refugees coping with the trauma of displacement and cultural alienation in foreign lands. Baba, who is struggling with survivor's remorse and the loss of his homeland, and Amir, who is grappling with identity crisis in his adopted country, poignantly capture the psychological scars of war and displacement.

Hassan and Sohrab are symbols of victims of ethnic abuse. The internalised prejudice and privilege that perpetuate social inequalities in Afghan society are exemplified by Amir's betrayal of Hassan, his loyal companion and servant. Again, it is Sohrab's economic and ethnic status which results in Sohrab being forced into a *bacha bazi.* The resilience and dignity of the Hazara people in the face of systemic injustice are underscored by Hassan's loyalty and self-sacrifice, despite the years of abuse and discrimination he endured.

Atonement digs into the complexities of early twentieth-century English society, shedding light on the effects of social class and gender norms on the tragic experiences of the main characters. Briony Tallis's interpretation of the relationship between Robbie Turner and her sister Cecilia is significantly influenced by the class disparities that characterise their environment. Briony's perception is obscured by her internalisation of societal prejudices and her inadequate comprehension of mature relationships. Despite his scholastic prowess, Robbie is still perceived as the son of the servant and his lower social status enables Briony to more easily accept that he is capable of the crime of which she accuses him.

Cecilia defies the expectations that are imposed on her as an upper-class woman by pursuing a relationship with Robbie and remaining by his side in the face of the scandal. The novel also investigates the impact of the societal constructs of family and loyalty on the characters. The fragility of family bonds under societal duress is illustrated by the Tallis family's responses to the crisis. The family's prioritisation of social reputation over truth and justice is evident in Emily Tallis's adherence to social propriety and her inability to query Briony's accusations. In contrast, Grace Turner, Robbie's mother, exemplifies resilience by maintaining her unwavering support for her son, despite the societal hostility she encounters. The contrasting reactions within these familial structures serve to emphasise the dual effects of societal values on personal relationships, which can both fortify and fracture them.

Cracking India highlights the impact of the solidification of religious and communal identities during Partition. Sidhwa's depiction of the sudden alteration of Lahore's cosmopolitan setting illustrates the complexity of religious identity and intercommunity relations at a turbulent time in South Asian history. All of a sudden Lenny notices that people in Lahore becomes conscious of religious distinctions. People identify themselves and others as Christians, Hindus, Muslims and Sikhs and they are reduced to symbols. Ayah, Imam Din and Yousaf are carried away by a new-found devotional ardour. The religious fervor leads Ayah to spend a small fortune on offerings at the temple; Imam Din and Yousaf attend the Jumah prayers at a mosque in Queen's Road on Friday afternoons. Lenny observes an increase in hushed conversations of late. In markets, restaurants and streets groups of people gather around and talk in whispers. This is a stark contrast to the bustle and camaraderie in the streets and public spaces of Lahore.

The political instability and constant conflict in Agu's unnamed West African country create an environment where violence and survival dictate everyday life. Agu's trauma is deeply rooted in the loss of his family and the brutalisation he endures as a child soldier. The political chaos is a constant backdrop to his personal suffering, where the collapse of societal structures forces children into combat, stripping them of their innocence and humanity. Agu's experiences are a direct result of the political corruption and power struggles that have torn his country apart, highlighting how macro-political issues manifest in individual traumas.

Culturally, the novel delves into the traditional expectations and values that shape Agu's identity and actions. Before the war disrupts his life, Agu is embedded in a community that values education, family and moral integrity. These cultural elements provide a foundation for his sense of self, even as they are shattered by the war. The cultural emphasis on family and respect for elders is evident in Agu's memories and flashbacks, which juxtapose the brutality of his present circumstances with the warmth and stability of his past. This cultural dissonance deepens Agu's trauma, as he is forced to reconcile his actions as a soldier with the values he was taught as a child. The disintegration of cultural norms and the imposition of a new, violent order create a profound sense of loss and confusion for Agu.

However, these cultural roots also contribute to Agu's resilience. His memories of his pre-war life and the cultural teachings of his community provide him with a moral compass and a source of hope. Despite the dehumanising experiences he faces, Agu's recollections of his family and the values they inculcated offer him a mental refuge and a sense of purpose. The cultural rituals and stories he remembers

serve as a means of psychological survival, helping him to maintain a sense of identity amidst the chaos.

The novel also explores the psychological impact of indoctrination and the stripping away of cultural identity as a means of control by the Commandant and other leaders. The children are not only physically brutalised but are also subjected to a form of cultural and ideological reprogramming, which seeks to erase their past identities and replace them with a militant persona. This enforced cultural erasure is a key factor in the trauma brought about on the characters, as it creates an internal conflict between their ingrained cultural values and the new, violent identity imposed upon them.

In *God Help the Child*, socio-cultural factors are instrumental in the characters' experiences and the trauma they endure. One noteworthy aspect is the legacy of slavery and its ongoing impact on African American communities. The novel investigates the ways in which the historical trauma of slavery is reflected in contemporary society.

Sweetness internalises societal standards of beauty that are anchored in colourism. Sweetness's personal experience of marginalisation and discrimination because of the colour of her skin has led her to believe that paler skin is superior. This internalised racism perpetuates a cycle of trauma within the family, as Bride experiences dislike and neglect because of her physical appearance.

Socio-cultural influences have a significant impact on the representation of trauma in the selected books. These influences enhance the narratives with varied points of view and thematic foci. The authors have employed diverse socio-historical

and cultural contexts to probe into the intricacies of childhood hardship — from Afghanistan's sociopolitical turbulence, to England's class divisions, sectarian tensions in partition-era India to West Africa's civil wars, and African-American narratives.

A comparative analysis of traumatic events in *The Kite Runner*, *Atonement*, *Cracking India, Beasts of No Nation, and God Help the Child* uncovers interesting linkages and divergences in the representation of trauma. These novels highlight the enormous influence of childhood tragedy even in later years of life. Amir's remorse and shame over betraying his childhood buddy Hassan echo throughout the story and defines his journey for redemption and self-forgiveness. Similarly, Briony Tallis struggles with the effects of her false allegations, emphasising the long-term impact of childhood trauma on identity and memory.

The convergence of political turmoil, physical impairment and problematic familial relationships compels Lenny to confront the responsibilities and challenges of adulthood prematurely, hastening her transformation from an innocent and carefree child to a disillusioned adult-child struggling with the aftermath of traumatic experiences. The childhood trauma that Agu endures has a significant and enduring effect. It deprives him of his innocence, compels him to mature prematurely, and leaves him struggling with feelings of inhumanity and guilt. Bride's early experiences of being neglected, emotionally mistreated and her false testimony have a major impact on her adult life and mental state. Consequently, she embarks on a quest to heal and explore her true self. The theme of childhood trauma runs throughout these novels, stressing how formative experiences affect the mental landscapes and interpersonal connections of the characters.

An interesting feature of all the five narratives is that the protagonists occupy the dual roles as perpetrators and victims of trauma. Individuals who have undergone trauma frequently find themselves in an intricate and demanding situation — that of being both the offender and the victim. This duality emerges from the cyclical nature of trauma, wherein the anguish and distress endured can result in detrimental actions that cause trauma to others. The trauma survivor may unknowingly replicate their own victimisation, exhibiting behaviours that resemble the abuse or neglect they experienced. This might emerge in relationships characterised by abuse, the misuse of substances, or other practices that are harmful to oneself. Simultaneously, the person continues to be a victim, struggling with the enduring consequences of their initial trauma.

This dynamic gives rise to a challenging psychological and emotional terrain, in which the individual grapples with reconciling their own status as a victim with their role as a wrongdoer. Effective healing and recuperation in such instances necessitate a sophisticated comprehension of trauma, self-consciousness and a readiness to tackle the intricacies of one's personal encounters.

Amir is both a perpetrator and a victim in *The Kite Runner*. He is a perpetrator for he fails to stop the rape of his friend Hassan, an act that haunts him with guilt for years, and he is a victim of his own cowardice and the prejudices of Afghan society that prevent him from standing up for his friend. Amir's inaction during Hassan's rape and his acts to frame Hassan as a thief make Amir a perpetrator, as he prioritises winning his father's approval over protecting his loyal friend. However, Amir is also a victim, as his own feelings of inadequacy and societal demands ultimately lead Amir to betray his friend.

Briony is both the instigator and victim of tragedy in *Atonement*. Briony's unfounded allegation against Robbie for rape has devastating consequences for him, while she herself experiences enduring remorse and psychological distress for her error, which she endeavours to make amends for through her fictional writing. The novel also presents Briony as a victim in her own right. Briony is shown to be a victim of her own youth, naivety and lack of understanding of the complex emotions and behaviors she witnesses. She is also a victim of her class and the inadequate parenting she receives, which contributes to her misperceptions and poor judgment. Furthermore, Briony suffers from loneliness and jealousy, as her family does not provide her with the support and understanding she needs during a difficult period of her adolescence.

Despite her young age and privileged upbringing, Lenny inadvertently becomes complicit in the violence that unfolds around her. Through her close relationship with her nanny, Ayah, Lenny is exposed to the diverse group of admirers that surround the beautiful Hindu woman. However, Lenny's innocent curiosity and inquisitiveness ultimately lead her to betray Ayah's location to the violent mob led by Ice-Candy-Man. This betrayal, though unintentional, results in Ayah's abduction and subsequent exploitation, making Lenny a passive perpetrator of the violence enacted upon her beloved nanny.

Conversely, Lenny is also portrayed as a victim of the traumatic violence surrounding Partition. She witnesses horrific acts of brutality. These traumatic sights leave a deep psychological impact on the young girl, leading her to re-enact the violence by tearing apart her own doll. Lenny's trauma is further compounded by her

guilt over Ayah's fate, for which she blames herself. The narrative emphasises Lenny's innocence and the way the adult world's violence intrudes upon her childhood. As a child caught up in the maelstrom of Partition, Lenny is very much a victim of the forces beyond her control. Lenny occupies a complex position in *Cracking India*, at times complicit in the violence as a perpetrator, while also being a victim of the trauma inflicted by the Partition. Her dual role highlights the nuanced ways in which even children, one of the most vulnerable sections can become entangled in the cycle of political violence.

Uzodinma Iweala's novel *Beasts of No Nation* depicts Agu, the main character, who as a child soldier is both the perpetrator and victim of violence. Agu is compelled by the Commandant to join a rebel faction and is coerced into murdering an unarmed individual as a part of his initiation. Agu is additionally exposed to physical and emotional abuse, including sexual exploitation, which intensifies his trauma. His formative years are disrupted as he is compelled to engage in brutal actions, such as taking lives and observing horrifying deeds, resulting in the erosion of his naivety.

Agu is also portrayed as a perpetrator who is compelled to commit several murders, including those of a mother and daughter. This haunting experience stays with him throughout the story. He engages in a range of war crimes, including looting, rape and murder, which exacerbate his moral and emotional distress. Agu's fear of the Commandant and other troops compels him to acquiesce to their demands and engage in acts of violence, disregarding his moral qualms. The story intertwines Agu's experiences as both a victim and a perpetrator, representing the intricate and frequently conflicting nature of the experiences of child soldiers.

In *God Help the Child*, Lula Ann is the victim of her mother Sweetness's deep-seated prejudice against her dark skin tone. Sweetness is repulsed by her daughter's blue-black complexion and thick lips, and is unable to accept or love her. She distances herself from her own child. Deprived of maternal love and acceptance, the young Lula Ann grows up feeling unloved and ashamed of her appearance. She is bullied and taunted by her peers. As a child, the desperate and attention-starved Bride falsely accuses Sofia Huxley of child molestation. Bride does this to win her mother's approval. This false testimony destroys Sofia's life for fifteen years as she suffers abuse and ostracism in prison.

Bride's actions, motivated by her own unfulfilled want for affection, render her an accomplice in the destruction of an innocent individual's life. She assumes the dual role of being both a victim of her circumstances and a perpetrator who inflicts harm on others. Bride's narrative exemplifies the recurring pattern of child abuse, wherein individuals who have experienced abuse as children frequently perpetuate the cycle by becoming abusers themselves.

Another common thread that runs across these stories is the interaction between personal trauma and historical events. *The Kite Runner* delves into the long-term consequences of the Soviet Invasion and Taliban rule in Afghanistan. *Atonement* narrates how the ripple effects of a single lie told in the midst of a family crisis is amplified by the chaos of war and the inability of the characters to escape the consequences of that fateful day. In *Cracking India*, Lenny Sethi's coming-of-age story takes place against the backdrop of India's partition, highlighting the ways in which communal violence intersects with human pain. Similarly, Agu's traumatic

journey in *Beasts of No Nation* mirrors the greater geopolitical changes of civil war. It emphasises the interconnectedness between individual and social sufferings. In Toni Morrison's novel *God Help the Child*, the personal trauma experienced by the protagonist, Bride, is deeply intertwined with the broader political and social upheaval of the time. Morrison explores how the legacy of racism, discrimination and systemic oppression can profoundly shape an individual's psychological and emotional development, leading to complex and often devastating consequences.These stories show how historical events leave an indelible mark on a person's psyche. They highlight the intricate interplay between personal agency and external factors.

Furthermore, the combination of horrific experiences in these works emphasises the transforming potential of storytelling and empathy in dealing with misfortune. The journey of the characters for redemption and recovery highlight narrative's restorative power in dealing with trauma and building resilience. By examining the narrative strategies and thematic resonances that connect these works, scholars might gain a better understanding of literature's ability to reveal the human condition and provide insights into the intricacies of trauma depiction.

A comparative analysis of the traumatic experiences in *The Kite Runner, Atonement, Cracking India, Beasts of No Nation* and *God Help the Child* finds fascinating thematic linkages and divergences in the representation of trauma across distinct cultural settings. One can acquire a better understanding of the intricacies of human suffering, resilience and identity by examining how these narratives connect with universal themes while simultaneously representing specific cultural settings. This comparative approach emphasises the transformative power of literature in

confronting and transcending adversity and also underlines how storytelling promotes empathy, understanding and healing in the face of trauma.

This thesis presents a case for an inclusive and expansive approach to trauma studies, emphasising the importance of integrating non-Western representations of childhood trauma into the mainstream. This research argues that the predominant emphasis on Western narratives in the existing discussion of trauma literature restricts one's comprehension/understanding of the various ways in which trauma manifests itself in different cultural contexts. The novels studied in the thesis explore historical upheavals like the Taliban takeover of Afghanistan, Partition of India, African civil wars and the ongoing impact of racial inequality in the United States and provide a deeper understanding of how sociopolitical forces perpetuate violence and suffering.

The Kite Runner portrays the trauma of young Amir and Hassan in Afghanistan. The novel intertwines personal guilt with national guilt and offers an insight into the intersection of personal and political trauma. In *Cracking India*, Sidhwa explores the impact of the Partition of India on children, and looks at how gender, identity and nationalism contribute to trauma during such a historical event. *Beasts of No Nation* sheds light on the harrowing experience of child soldiers in African civil wars and reveals the psychological devastation experienced by children who are forced to participate in warfare. *God Help the Child* examines how racial identity and family dynamics shape childhood trauma in the African-American experience and presents a distinct narrative of resilience and self-identity. While these novels come from different cultural and geographical contexts, they share a common thread: they illustrate how childhood trauma is deeply embedded in and influenced by socio-political and historical forces.

This thesis, by highlighting these culturally specific narratives, emphasise the diverse ways trauma is experienced, processed and expressed across global contexts.

This research has broadened the scope of trauma studies by studying the depiction of childhood trauma in both Western as well as non-Western contexts. It challenges the dominance of the Eurocentric framework in trauma studies and highlights the cultural specificity of trauma experiences by focussing on non- Western narratives.

Post-Traumatic Growth

An essential aspect of trauma literature is the notion of post-traumatic growth (PTG), which refers to the positive psychological change that can occur as a result of adversity and trauma. This concept, often explored alongside the darker aspects of trauma, is crucial to understanding the trajectories followed by the protagonists in the novels studied in this thesis. While these characters endure immense suffering, their journeys also reveal the potential for resilience, transformation and embracing new perspectives on life. Amir's journey in *The Kite Runner* is one of significant transformation, where his initial burden of guilt and shame is alleviated through his return to Afghanistan and his attempts to rescue Sohrab. This demonstrates post-traumatic growth through self-forgiveness and moral recovery despite enduring loss and regret. Briony Tallis in *Atonement* grapples with guilt after falsely accusing Robbie Turner and her journey of post-traumatic growth is reflected in her mature recognition of the consequences of her actions and her attempts to atone. This reveals how growth takes place through self-reflection and taking responsibility for one's actions, even when reconciliation is largely symbolic. Lenny, the narrator of *Cracking India,* grows up amid the traumatic events of the Partition of India, and her post-traumatic growth is evident in her evolving understanding of identity, gender and historical trauma, as she navigates personal suffering and the complexities of her society. In *Beasts of No Nation,* Agu, a child soldier, experiences intense trauma but demonstrates resilience and recovery as he escapes the brutality of war and gradually reclaims his identity and moral compass, indicating that post-traumatic growth can occur even in the face of such horrors, though it is fraught with pain and

psychological scars. Bride, in *God Help the Child*, experiences emotional neglect and racial trauma, yet her journey towards self-acceptance and healing shows how post-traumatic growth can unfold through self-reclamation, love and the breaking of cycles of abuse. Post-traumatic growth is a central theme, complementing the depictions of trauma by showing how the protagonists, though marked by their traumatic experiences, exhibit resilience and transformation. Their growth is not about complete healing but about integrating trauma into a new understanding of the self, often leading to greater empathy, a deeper appreciation of life, and a more nuanced engagement with the world. This finding suggests that trauma narratives should not only focus on suffering but also on the resilience and capacity for growth that often accompanies the human response to hardship; this highlights the complexity of trauma and its potential to bring about personal transformation.

Theoretical Contributions of Trauma Literature

A comparative analysis of *The Kite Runner*, *Atonement*, *Cracking India*, *Beasts of No Nation,* and *God Help the Child*, provides deep insights into the complexities of the representation of trauma. This analysis, using literary trauma theory, has widened one's understanding of the varied nature of trauma and foregrounds the transformational power of narrative in developing empathy, discussion and cross-cultural understanding. This investigation challenges monolithic views of trauma and emphasises the need of culturally grounded methods to trauma research so as to foster inclusivity, equity and cultural sensitivity in the field.

Trauma literature's theoretical contributions emphasise the importance of the narrative in creating individual and communal understandings of trauma. A study of the narrative methods such as unreliable narration, fractured timelines and symbolic imagery helps one understand how literature portrays the complexities of the experiences of trauma and builds empathy in readers. Such an engagement highlights narrative's transformative power in promoting solidarity across cultural boundaries,

as well as establishing relationships and shared understanding among varied populations.

Furthermore, theoretical contributions of trauma literature help one understand how trauma affects personal and social identities. This research has shed light on how narratives of trauma impact people's ideas of self and community by exploring how they intersect with larger sociopolitical environment. This investigation demonstrates the transformative power of trauma literature in questioning dominant narratives and bringing to the foreground marginalised perspectives. Such an understanding can enhance efforts to promote social justice, equity and inclusivity in trauma research and practice.

Practical Applications of Cross-Cultural Trauma Research

The practical applications of cross-cultural trauma research go beyond academia to inform and enrich clinical practice, policy development and community interventions which are aimed at meeting the diverse needs of trauma survivors across cultural contexts. By drawing on insights from cross-cultural trauma narratives, practitioners and policymakers can develop more nuanced and culturally sensitive approaches to trauma-informed care and advocacy.

One important practical application is the development of culturally sensitive therapies for trauma sufferers. Engaging with varied trauma narratives provides practitioners with significant insights into culturally-specific coping mechanisms, healing practices, and community resources that may be used to create and execute informed treatment plans. This interaction encourages culturally sensitive care and helps trauma survivors access resources and support networks that are tailored to their specific needs and cultural backgrounds.

Cross-cultural trauma research also influences policy development and

advocacy initiatives aimed at overcoming institutional barriers to trauma recovery and social justice. By stressing on the linkages between trauma and the larger socio- political contexts, scholars and activists can lobby for policy reforms that promote equitable access to mental health services, culturally competent care and social support for traumatised communities. This engagement promotes social change and advances attempts to eliminate structural imbalances that perpetuate trauma and adversity.

Furthermore, the practical implications of cross-cultural trauma research include community-based projects that promote resilience and collective healing. Practitioners and community leaders can help trauma survivors heal by amplifying varied trauma tales and by facilitating communication across cultural barriers. This involvement boosts community resilience and creates welcoming environments that value cultural humility, empathy and collective well-being.Using insights from cross-cultural trauma narratives, practitioners and policymakers can cultivate more nuanced and culturally responsive approaches to trauma recovery, advocacy and community empowerment. This can foster resilience, healing and social change in diverse traumatised communities.

Approaching Trauma through Literature: Educational and Therapeutic Perspectives

The use of literature as a tool to address trauma, as demonstrated by a comparative analysis of *The Kite Runner, Atonement, Cracking India, Beasts of No Nation, and God Help the Child,* highlights the transformative power of narratives in educational and therapeutic settings. Educators and therapists who engage with trauma narratives can help individuals and groups affected by trauma heal, develop empathy and reflect critically.

One important educational approach is the incorporation of trauma literature into curriculum and practice. By introducing various trauma narratives into

educational contexts, educators foster empathy, cultural understanding and critical consciousness in pupils. This involvement promotes discussion about the impact of trauma on personal and collective identities, pushing students to consider larger sociopolitical contexts and devise methods for recovery and social change.

Literature also works as a therapeutic tool for trauma rehabilitation and healing. Therapists use trauma narratives in bibliotherapy and story therapy to help clients process emotions, make meaning, and feel empowered. This interaction fosters self-awareness, resilience and agency, allowing people to navigate and alter trauma experiences through artistic expression and narrative.

Addressing trauma through literature also creates chances for community engagement and social advocacy. Educators and therapists foster conversation, solidarity and social healing by organising reading groups, workshops and public discussions centred on trauma tales. This participation promotes community resilience, mutual support and empowerment while also increasing efforts to eliminate stigma and institutional barriers to trauma healing.

Finally, addressing trauma through literature emphasises the transformational power of narratives in educational and therapeutic settings. Educators and therapists use trauma narratives to promote empathy, critical reflection, and empowerment in individuals and communities affected by trauma, supporting resilience, healing and social change through creative expression, dialogue and collective action.

Chapter 8

Conclusion

This thesis titled “Narratives of Traumatised Childhood: A Study of Select Novels Across Cultures” has sought to analyse the representation of childhood trauma in select novels from diverse socio-cultural backgrounds with an aim to deepen one’s understanding of the intricate ways in which trauma shapes individual identities and collective narratives. It has also endeavoured to analyse the narrative strategies, linguistic tools and cultural contexts that shape the representation of childhood trauma in the literary works selected for study. In particular, the study has attempted to examine the hypothesis that literary narratives provide a discursive space to examine the existential dimensions of childhood trauma in a personalised and contextual manner.

The relationship between trauma and narrative is almost as long as the history of trauma itself. “Indeed, it is a widely accepted therapeutic truth that the stories we tell about the catastrophes that beset us – both individual and collective – can be crucial tools for recovery” (Pederson 97). Roger Luckhurst holds that some of the most intriguing cultural representations of trauma have focused on developing a framework that seeks to recognise and address effects of past trauma; the efforts of these cultural representations are aimed not on “preserving trauma but on transforming its legacy”(213). Luckhurst’s opinions prompt one to contemplate the reasons behind an author’s inclination to write a trauma narrative, often unveiling the darkest aspect of human nature. The author’s purpose is definitely not to engage the reader with sensational or shocking information, but rather to demonstrate the

capacity for resilience even in the face of the worst that humans can inflict upon one another.

This thesis has examined in detail Khaled Hosseini's *The Kite Runner,* Ian McEwan's *Atonement* , Bapsi Sidhwa's *Cracking India,* Uzodinma Iweala's *Beasts of No Nation* and Tony Morrison's *God Help the Child* — rich and diverse narratives spanning different cultural, geographical, historical and political contexts —with a view to analyse the multifaceted nature of childhood trauma. The study has explored the enduring impact of childhood trauma on individual lives and collective histories, while also highlighting the redemptive potential of storytelling as a means of bearing witness to the pain and resilience of the human spirit. This chapter aims to recapture the key arguments and findings made in each of the preceding chapters and highlight the limitations of the study.

The introductory chapter provides the background information, explains the purpose and importance of the study and presents the main research questions and objectives. This chapter includes a brief review of literature and gives an overview of the theoretical frameworks and methodological techniques used in the research.

Chapter 2 which studies Khaled Hosseini's *The Kite Runner* has examined how the novel presents childhood trauma. The novel shows how an individual's identity and conduct can be profoundly shaped by childhood trauma, leaving him/her with long-lasting emotional and psychological scars. Amir's individual guilt stems from his inability to save his friend Hassan from a sexual assault perpetrated by a gang of bullies led by Assef. Amir's guilt also extends to familial and societal levels. Amir is overwhelmed by thoughts of regret for his inability to be sincere to Hassan, who later on in the novel is revealed to be Amir's half-brother. As a Pasthun, Amir is

also remorseful for the injustices that the Hazara people endure at the hands of his community.

Amir's experiences of guilt and trauma manifest themselves in a number of ways. He exhibits symptoms of post-traumatic stress disorder (PTSD), such as intrusive memories, anxiety and alterations in mood and behaviour. Amir endeavours to address his feelings of guilt by engaging in acts of self-sacrifice, with the aim of seeking redemption. He orchestrates the departure of Hassan and his father, believing that this action will absolve him from his feelings of guilt. Years later, he successfully undertakes a perilous expedition to save Hassan's son Sohrab from a life of misery and makes amends for his past shortcomings.

The novel examines how social conflicts and historical events affect people's identities and how these experiences add to the trauma that affects the entire community. Hassan and Sohrab, members of the marginalised Hazara community undergo various kinds of abuse ranging from verbal to sexual. Both Hassan and Sohrab display the enduring consequences of their childhood sexual assault. Hassan exhibits signs of social withdrawal and a lack of confidence, whereas Sohrab resorts to silence and even attempts to commit suicide. Their parallel experiences underscore the transmission of trauma through successive generations. Amir's act of rescuing Sohrab presents a chance for healing, although it is unlikely that the wounds from his traumatic experiences will ever mend completely.

The novel also discusses how war, ethnic prejudice and religious fanaticism have dehumanized Afghan society. However, it ends on a positive note by emphasising that education, empathy and understanding can lift Afghanistan out of the ills that are plaguing its society.

Chapter 3 has analysed Ian McEwan's novel *Atonement* and it explores childhood trauma through the prism of guilt and the power of imagination. Briony Tallis's false accusation against Robbie Turner stems from a child's misunderstanding, yet it sets off a chain of events that irrevocably alters the lives of everyone involved. McEwan's narrative delves into the complexities of memory and the difficulties of atonement, highlighting how a single moment of misjudgment can resonate through time, causing lasting psychological scars. Briony's trauma is the result of her incapacity to accurately interpret and process the sexual tension she observes between Robbie and Cecilia. Her immature imagination leads Briony to misinterpret Robbie's and Cecilia's interaction as a forced sexual encounter. The trauma of Briony is further exacerbated when she mistakes a letter that Robbie writes to Cecilia to be a declaration of desire rather than of love. Robbie and Cecilia's relationship is irreparably damaged by Briony's unfounded accusation, which forces Cecilia to disown her family in protest. Robbie is incarcerated for a crime that he did not commit and subsequently perishes while serving in World War II. This conflict also results in the death of Cecilia, which leaves Briony with a lifetime of trauma and guilt.

The novel also juxtaposes personal trauma with the collective trauma of World War II, providing a broader context for understanding the pervasive impact of guilt and redemption. It focuses on the significant ways in which the Second World War altered British society, particularly the country's politics, economy and social structure. It draws attention to the differences in opportunities and how they affect people such as Robbie and Paul Marshal. The chapter examines how the novel adds to discussions on memory and trauma studies by emphasising the subjective nature of recollection. Furthermore, it underscores the challenges of presenting a coherent

storyline in the context of trauma by employing an untrustworthy narrative.

McEwan's use of metafiction enables him to examine the perils of misinterpretation, the influence of tragedy on an individual's mind and the constraints of fiction in delivering genuine redemption. The story functions as a potent critique of how childhood experiences, particularly those involving trauma, can mould an individual's perceptions and persistently trouble them throughout their adult life. In a nutshell, Chapter 3 observes that *Atonement* adds to discussions on memory and trauma studies by emphasising the subjective nature of recollection. Furthermore, a detailed study of the novel also underscores the challenges of presenting a cogent narrative in the setting of trauma.

Chapter 4 has investigated Bapsi Sidhwa's *Cracking India* which explores the collective as well as the individual anguish endured by Lenny amidst the Partition of India. It contends that the novel's historical setting of political turmoil and bloodshed serves as a contrasting background against which personal and group traumas are revealed. The chapter observes that Partition profoundly impacts the courses of Lenny's and Ranna's lives. After enduring harrowing ordeals, they are unable to return to their former lifestyles. They are deprived of their innocence, and the experience of Partition compells them to grow up prematurely. Children who suffer physically or mentally ultimately face trauma, confusion and a loss of their sense of self.

Sidhwa's utilisation of a child narrator provides a distinct point of view on the atrocities of Partition, effectively portraying the naivety and bewilderment of a youngster who observes unfathomable acts of brutality. The narrative of the story is non-linear, as it portrays different moments and events in a non-chronological order.

This strategy imitates the fragmented quality of trauma and memory by emphasising the disturbing outcomes of separation. The narrative intertwines individual testimonies, political advancements and cultural forces, creating a non-linear framework that is well-suited for the examination of various subjects.

The aforementioned narrative decision aligns with Geoffrey Hartman's concept that trauma narratives frequently necessitate a witness or a surrogate witness to articulate the indescribable essence of catastrophic experiences (Hartman 537). The convergence of gender, identity and trauma in *Cracking India* also emphasises the distinct susceptibilities and fortitude of women and children when confronted with communal violence, thereby contributing a crucial aspect to comprehending trauma in postcolonial settings.

Chapter 5 has discussed Uzodinma Iweala's *Beasts of No Nation* and it explores the harsh truth of child soldiering in West Africa. Agu's transition from a naive youngster to a toughened soldier is a distressing portrayal of how violence strips away humanity and takes advantage of those who are most susceptible. The narrative's vivid, intense imagery and its raw language, effectively convey the immediate and terrible nature of Agu's experiences. This stands in stark contrast to the other works, which present a more contemplative and nuanced depiction of trauma. Iweala's examination of the psychological and moral consequences of coerced involvement in violence offers a compelling analysis of the erosion of innocence and the long-lasting effects of war on children.

Although the novel presents a rather sombre aspect of life — a grim picture of the dehumanising ordeals that child soldiers undergo as well as Agu's transition from an innocent and carefree youngster to a toughened desensitsed combatant —it also suggests the possibility of change, rejuvenation and enhancement for society as a

whole. Agu is convinced that a time will come when conflict will cease to exist and he will be able to co-exist peacefully in a comfortable home, enjoying an abundance of food. He finds solace in the thought that there might be a brighter future awaiting him. While struggling to endure the conflict, he anticipates its eventual cessation, yearning to resume his education and attend church to seek daily absolution from God. In the final chapters of the story, he is observed receiving therapeutic treatment at a rehabilitation facility.

Iweala's narrative approach, characterised by a stream-of-consciousness style, immerses the reader in Agu's fragmented and chaotic mental state, reflecting the disorientation and moral confusion that accompany traumatic experiences. This aligns with Judith Herman's concept of trauma as a disruption of identity and continuity, where the individual's sense of self and moral framework are profoundly shaken (Herman 51). The portrayal of child soldiering in *Beasts of No Nation* also raises important ethical and psychological questions about the long-term impact of such experiences on children's development and their potential for rehabilitation and recovery.

Chapter 6 has investigated Toni Morrison's novel *God Help the Child.* It delves into the intersection of racial identity and childhood trauma by focusing on thecharacter of Bride. Bride endures emotional neglect and harsh treatment from her mother as she is dark-skinned. Bride's life is marked by a legacy of inherited trauma stemming from racism, parental abuse, and the consequences of her own actions - all of which have profoundly scarred her and shaped her identity and worldview.

The chapter also examines the ways in which trauma can be passed down through generations, as exemplified in the character of Bride's mother,Sweetness.

Sweetness's own traumatic experiences of rejection and marginalisation because of her skin colour as well as her race shape her relationship with her daughter, leading to a complex and often strained dynamic. Morrison's portrayal of this intergenerational transmission of trauma illuminates the cyclical nature of psychological wounds and the challenges inherent in breaking free from such patterns.

Despite the profound and often debilitating nature of the trauma depicted in the novel, Morrison also presents a narrative of resilience and the potential for healing. The chapter charts the journeys of the characters and explores the various coping mechanisms and pathways to recovery explored by the author. It argues that the novel highlights the importance of self-acceptance, forgiveness and the transformative power of human connections. The novel's exploration of these themes offers a nuanced and empathetic perspective on the complex process of healing from childhood trauma.

Morrison's novel explores the enduring consequences of racial trauma and the intricate complexities of maternal filial bonds. The novel's non-sequential organisation and alternating viewpoints mirror the fractured and diverse characteristics of trauma. Morrison's examination of Bride's progression towards self-approval and recuperation also emphasises the capacity for perseverance and metamorphosis in the presence of tragedy, a recurring motif across the chosen works.

Chapter 7 has undertaken a comparative study of the five novels selected for study. The comparative examination commences by recognising the ubiquitous character of trauma, especially during childhood and its capacity to disturb an individual's perception of normality and selfhood. Childhood, frequently romanticised as a time of purity and safety, becomes a place of significant disruption in these

stories. The comparative analysis of these novels highlights the various methods through which childhood trauma is depicted and dealt with in literature. Each writer utilises unique narrative strategies to effectively portray the complex and varied aspects of trauma, such as employing first-person viewpoints, unreliable narration, or fragmented storytelling. These strategies effectively communicate the psychological and emotional effects of trauma and also encourage readers to explore the intricacies of memory, identity, and recovery. By placing these stories within their distinct cultural and historical settings, these texts also provide valuable perspectives on both the general and specific aspects of traumatic events. This enhances one's understanding of the human condition and also of the ongoing search for meaning and redemption in the aftermath of trauma.

This thesis, by highlighting culturally specific narratives, emphasise the diverse ways trauma is experienced, processed and expressed across global contexts. This research has broadened the scope of trauma studies by studying the depiction of childhood trauma in both Western as well as non-Western contexts. It challenges the dominance of the Eurocentric framework in trauma studies and highlights the cultural specificity of trauma experiences by focussing on non- Western narratives.

The exploration of childhood trauma in literature, as presented through the select novels in this study, highlights the profound and varied impact of traumatic experiences on individuals and communities. While this thesis on childhood trauma has been of great use in providing fresh insights to the discipline, further research could open up even more complex issues in the context of childhood trauma. The following chapter outlines several recommendations for future research.

Chapter 9

Recommendations

Childhood trauma explored through the lens of the traumatised child is a prevalent theme in literature. This tradition originated in the late 19th century, influenced by the Romantic and Victorian focus on the child. This has further been shaped by advancements in development psychology and child development studies. The exploration of childhood trauma in literature presented in the novels selected for this study highlights the profound and varied impact of traumatic experiences on individuals and communities.

This thesis has utilised concepts from literary trauma theory to delve into the psychological, cultural and sociopolitical dimensions of trauma depicted in *The Kite Runner*, *Atonement*, *Cracking India*, *Beasts of No Nation* and *God Help the Child*. The portrayal of childhood trauma in these literary works highlights the impact trauma has had on the imagination and coping mechanisms of the child. The literary works also reveal the cultural evolution or progression of the different forms of trauma that dominate scientific and social concern. The findings of the study underscore the necessity for a multifaceted approach to understanding trauma narratives. They also highlight the interplay between the individual experience and the larger cultural context.

As one concludes this research, it is crucial to identify avenues for further research in the area so as to deepen one's understanding of the representation of trauma in literature. This chapter outlines several recommendations for prospective research and aims to point out gaps in current scholarship and explore new

dimensions of trauma narratives. In doing so, the thesis hopes to contribute to a more comprehensive and nuanced understanding of the role trauma plays, in shaping individual and collective identities across diverse cultures and historical periods.

Potential areas for further examination may include the following:

- Subsequent research may focus on the intersectionality of childhood trauma, with special emphasis laid on factors like race, gender, socio-economic status and disability. Such an approach can throw light on how different identities intersect with one's traumatic experiences.

- The thesis also recommends examining recent literary works that address childhood trauma in the context of current social, political and environmental issues. Examining contemporary literary works from such a perspective can provide valuable insights into the evolving patterns of narratives of childhood trauma as reactions to the shifting global landscape.

- Trauma studies has historically been dominated by Western perspectives and these perspectives look at trauma only through canonical paradigms from the western world. The diverse and culturally specific trauma narratives of non-Western populations are completely neglected. An expansion of one's understanding of the representations of trauma can be accomplished through the further investigation of non-Western literary works that concentrate on childhood trauma. Such a study has the potential to contribute to the decolonisation of trauma studies. It may also help to bring to the fore, voices from marginalised groups.

- The thesis also proposes integrating psychological perspectives, especially from developmental psychology and trauma-focused therapy, into the analysis of literary narratives of traumatised childhoods. The application of such an interdisciplinary approach has the potential to improve the comprehension of the psychological processes and repercussions of traumatic experiences. Likewise, the influence of novels depicting childhood tragedy on the readers' empathy and emotional reactions can be explored in future research. Acquiring an understanding of how literature affects the perceptions and attitudes of the readers towards trauma can improve the implementation of trauma-informed reading techniques.

- The thesis suggests undertaking research on trauma narratives beyond the novel, to include other genres like poetry, short story, memoirs, graphic novels, photographs, paintings and other art forms. Examining diverse forms of literature can provide a comprehensive view of how trauma is represented across different artistic mediums.

- Subsequent research can also compare and contrast literary portrayal of childhood trauma with non-literary sources like historical records, personal testimonies and psychological case studies. This interdisciplinary approach can provide a deeper understanding of the relationship between literature and real-life experiences of childhood trauma

Works Cited

Alba, Richard. *Blurring the Color Line: The New Chance for a More Integrated America*. Stanford UP, 2009.

Albers, Stefanie, and Torsten Caeners. "The Poetics and Aesthetics of Ian McEwan's *Atonement*." *English Studies*, vol. 90, no. 6, 2009, pp. 707-720.

Alexander, Jeffrey C. "Toward a Theory of Cultural Trauma." *Cultural Trauma and Collective Identity*, U of California P, 2004, pp. 1–30.

Anrig, Charlotte LR. "God Help the Child a Mature Morrison Child." *The Harvard Crimson*, vol. 21, 2015.

Austin, Linda M. "Children of Childhood: Nostalgia and the Romantic Legacy." *Studies in Romanticism*, vol. 42, no. 1, 2003, pp. 75–98.

Ayyilidiz, N. E. "Traumatized Perception of the Self and Time in Ian McEwan's *The Cement Garden* and *The Child in Time*." *Litera: Journal of Language, Literature and Culture Studies*, vol. 32, no. 1, 2022, pp. 21-40.

Balaev, Michelle. "Literary Trauma Theory Reconsidered." *Contemporary Approaches in Literary Trauma Theory*, edited by Michelle Balaev, Palgrave Macmillan, 2014, pp. 1-14.

Berents, Helen. "This is my Story": Children's War Memoirs and Challenging Protectionist Discourses." *International Review of the Red Cross*, vol. 101, no. 911, 2019, pp. 459-479.

Berry, Mary F., and John W. Blassingame. "Africa, Slavery, & the Roots of Contemporary Black Culture." *The Massachusetts Review*, vol. 18, no. 3, 1977, pp. 501–16.

Biehl, J., et al. "Subjectivity: Ethnographic Investigations Introduction: Rethinking Subjectivity." *Subjectivity: Ethnographic Investigations*, edited by J. Biehl et al., U of California P, 2007, pp. 1-23.

Bloom, Harold. *Towards a Theory of Revisionism*. Oxford University Press, 1982.

---. *Bloom's Guides: Khaled Hosseini's The Kite Runner*. Bloom's Literary Criticism, 2009.

Bloom, Sandra L. "Trauma Theory Abbreviated." https://strengthcounselling.ca/wp-content/uploads/2018/05/trauma-theory-abbreviated.pdf

Booth, Wayne. *The Rhetoric of Fiction*. ChicagoUP,1961.

Butalia, Urvashi. *The Other Side of Silence: Voices from the Partition of India*. Duke UP, 2000.

Butchart, Alexander, et al. *Preventing Child Maltreatment: A Guide to Taking Action and Generating Evidence*. World Health Organization, 2006, https://apps.who.int/iris/bitstream/handle/10665/43499/9241594365_eng.pdf

Caruth, Cathy, editor. *Trauma: Explorations in Memory*. Johns Hopkins UP, 1995.

---.*Unclaimed Experience: Trauma, Narrative, and History*. Johns Hopkins UP, 2016.

Clark, Kenneth B., and Mamie K. Clark. “The Development of Consciousness of Self and the Emergence of Racial Identification in Negro Preschool Children.” *The Journal of Social Psychology,* vol. 10, no. 4, 1939, pp. 591-599.

Cloitre, Marylene, et al. *Treating Survivors of Childhood Abuse and Interpersonal Trauma: STAIR Narrative Therapy*. Guilford Publications, 2020.

Collins, Joseph J. *Understanding War in Afghanistan*. NDU Press, 2011.

Crane, R. J. “ A Passion for History and Truth Telling:The Early Novels of Bapsi Sidhwa.” *The Novels of Bapsi Sidhwa,* edited by Navya Kapadia and R.K.Dhawan. Prestige Books.1996.

Derrida, Jacques. *On Cosmopolitanism and Forgiveness*. Translated by Mark Dooley and Michael Hughe.Taylor & Francis, 2003.

Donovan, Courtney, and Ebru Ustundag. “Graphic Narratives, Trauma and Social Justice.” *Studies in Social Justice*, vol. 11, no. 2, 2017, pp. 221-237.

Doyle, Laura. “Of Race and Woman: Eugenics, Motherhood, and Racial Patriarchy.” *Bordering on the Body: The Racial Matrix of Modern Fiction and Culture*, edited by Arnold Rampersad and Shelley Fisher Fishkin, Oxford UP, 1994, pp. 1-35.

Eaglestone, Robert. “‘You Would Not Add to My Suffering if You Knew What I Have Seen’: Holocaust Testimony and Contemporary African Trauma Literature.” *Studies in the Novel*, vol. 40, no. 1/2, 2008, pp. 72-85.

Edkins, Jenny. *Trauma and the Memory of Politics*. Cambridge UP, 2003.

Etherington, Kim. *Trauma, the Body and Transformation: A Narrative Inquiry*. Jessica Kingsley Publishers, 2003.

Eyerman, Ron. “Cultural Trauma: Slavery and the Formation of African American Identity.” *Cultural Trauma and Collective Identity*, edited by Jeffrey C. Alexander et al., U of California P, 2004, pp. 60-111.

Fanon, Frantz. *Black Skin, White Masks*. Translated by Charles Lam Markmann, Pluto Press, 1986.

Fludernik, Monika. *Towards a ‘Natural’ Narratology*. Routledge, 1996.

---. “Natural Narratology and Cognitive Parameters.” *Narrative Theory and the Cognitive Sciences*, edited by David Herman, CSLI Publications, 2003, pp. 243-267.

Forna, Aminatta. “Who Owns Your Story? Transcending the Trauma Narrative.” *The Yale Review*, vol. 110, no. 1, 2022, pp. 36-43.

Fraser, Ian. “Class Experience in McEwan’s Atonement.” *Critique: Studies in Contemporary Fiction*, vol. 54, no. 4, 2013, pp. 465-477.

Freud, Sigmund. *Beyond the Pleasure Principle*. Translated by James Strachey, W.W. Norton, 1961.

---. “ Studies on Hysteria”. *The Complete Psychological Works of Sigmund Freud* Volume II. Translated by James Strachey, Hogarth Press,1955.

Gehrmann, Susanne. “The Child Soldier’s Soliloquy. Voices of a New Archetype in African Writing.” *Études littéraires africaines*, no. 32, 2011, pp. 31-43.

Glaser, Danya. “Emotional Abuse and Neglect (Psychological Maltreatment): A Conceptual Framework.” *Child Abuse & Neglect*, vol. 26, no. 6-7, 2002, pp. 697-714.

Graeber, Laurel. “The Seeds Of Partition.” Review of Cracking India. *New York Times Book Review*, October 6,1991.

Grimshaw, Roger. “My Story – Witnessing Narratives of Childhood Trauma and Violence: Roger Grimshaw Reports on New Research From the Centre for Crime and Justice Studies.” *Criminal Justice Matters*, vol. 86, no. 1, 2011, pp. 43-44.

Gross, Terry. “‘I Regret Everything’: Toni Morrison Looks Back On Her Personal Life.” Interview with Toni Morrison. *Fresh Air*, NPR, 24 Aug. 2015.

Hartman,Geoffrey H. *The Longest Shadow:In the Aftermath of the Holocaust,* Indiana UP, 1996.

Herman, David. *Basic Elements of Narrative*. Wiley-Blackwell, 2009.

Herman, Judith Lewis. *Trauma and Recovery: The Aftermath of Violence - From Domestic Abuse to Political Terror*. Basic Books, 2015.

Hidalgo, Pilar. “Memory and Storytelling in Ian McEwan’s *Atonement*.” *Critique: Studies in Contemporary Fiction*, vol. 46, no. 2, 2005, pp. 82-91.

hooks, bell. *Rock My Soul: Black People and Self-Esteem*. Atria Books, 2003.

Hosseini, Khaled. *The Kite Runner*. Penguin, 2004.

Iweala, Uzodinma. *Beasts of No Nation*. HarperCollins, 2005.

Jarrett-Macauley, Delia. *Moses, Citizen and Me*. Granta Books, 2005.

Jaspers,K. *The Question of German Guilt*. FordhamUP, 2000.

Jefferess, David. “To Be Good (Again): *The Kite Runner* as Allegory of Global Ethics.” *Journal of Postcolonial Writing*, vol. 45, no. 4, 2009, pp. 389-400.

Jena, Debaditya, and Kalinga Samantray. “Traumatic Experiences and Their Representation in Narratives: A Study.” *International Journal of English Language Studies*, vol. 3, no. 11, 2021, pp. 1-6.

Johansen, Jørgen Dines. “Feelings in Literature.” *Integrative Psychological and Behavioral Science*, vol. 44, 2010, pp. 185-196.

Kapadia, Navya., R.K. Dhawan. *The Novels of Bapsi Sidhwa*. Prestige Books, 1996.

Kardiner, Abram. *The Traumatic Neuroses of War*. P. B. Hoeber Incorporated, 1941.

Kertzer, Adriana. “Trauma Studies.” *A Companion to Children’s Literature*, edited by M.O. Grenby and Andrea Immel, Wiley-Blackwell, 2022, pp. 403-413.

Kick, Linda L. “Review of Toni Morrison by Jill Matus.” *Utopian Studies*, vol. 10, no. 2, 1999, pp. 202-204.

Kiser, Laura J., et al. “Who Are We, But for the Stories We Tell: Family Stories and Healing.” *Psychological Trauma: Theory, Research, Practice, and Policy*, vol. 2, no. 3, 2010, p. 243.

Kleist, Jacquelynn M. “More Than Victims: Versions of Feminine Power in Bapsi Sidhwa’s Cracking India.” *Pakistaniaat: A Journal of Pakistan Studies*, vol. 3, no. 2, 2011, pp. 69-81.

Kogan, Ilany. “Some Reflections on Ian McEwan’s Atonement: Enactment, Guilt, and Reparation.” *The Psychoanalytic Quarterly*, vol. 83, no. 1, 2014, pp. 49-70.

Kristeva, Julia. “Powers of Horror: An Essay on Abjection.” Translated by Leon S. Roudiez, Columbia UP, 1982.

Kumar, Krishna, and Anubha Multani, eds. *Childhood Traumas: Narratives and Representations*. Routledge, 2019.

Kumar, Vinod, and S. Gayathri. “The Silence of Compliance: Child Soldier Trauma Narratives in Contemporary African War Novels.” *Theory and Practice in Language Studies*, vol. 11, no. 12, 2021, pp. 1540-1547.

Kuschminder, Katie, and Manoj Dora. “Migration in Afghanistan: History, Current Trends and Future Prospects.” Maastricht Graduate School of Governance, 2009.

Lacan, Jacques. *The Four Fundamental Concepts of Psycho-Analysis*. Taylor & Francis, 2018.

---. “The Mirror Stage as Formative of the *I* Function as Revealed in Psychoanalytic Experience.” *Écrits: The First Complete Edition in English*. Translated by Bruce Fink ,W.W. Norton, 2006. 75-81.

---. *The Seminar of Jacques Lacan: Book 1: Freud's Papers on Technique 1953-1954*. Translated by Jacques-Alain Miller, Cambridge UP, 1988.

LaCapra, Dominick. *Writing History, Writing Trauma*. Johns Hopkins UP, 2014.

Lambert, Iain. “Chris Abani’s Graceland and Uzodinma Iweala’s Beasts of No Nation: Nonstandard English, Intertextuality and Ken Saro-Wiwa’s Sozaboy.” *Language and Literature*, vol. 20, no. 4, Nov. 2011, pp. 283–94.

Lee, Ah-Jung. “Understanding and Addressing the Phenomenon of ‘Child Soldiers’.” *The Refugee Studies Center Working Paper Series*, no. 52, 2009.

Leese, Peter, et al., eds. *Languages of Trauma: History, Memory, and Media*. U of Toronto P, 2021.

Lopez Ramirez, Manuela. “‘Childhood Cuts Festered and Never Scabbed Over’: Child Abuse in Toni Morrison’s God Help the Child.” Diss. Universitat de València, 2016.

Luckhurst, Roger. “The Trauma Question.” *Routledge eBooks*, 2013, https://doi.org/10.4324/9780203607305.

Martins, Catarina. "'How Many People Have You Killed?' Child-Soldiers in Literature and Film." *Cahiers d'études africaines*, vol. 53, no. 3, 2013, pp. 649-675.

Mastey, David. "Child Soldier Stories and Their Fictions." *Interventions*, vol. 18, no. 1, 2016, pp. 143-158.

---. "The Adulterated Children of Child Soldier Narratives." *Research in African Literatures*, vol. 48, no. 4, 2017, pp. 39-55.

Mathews, Peter. "The Impression of a Deeper Darkness: Ian McEwan's Atonement." *English Studies in Canada*, vol. 32, no. 1, 2006, pp. 147-160.

McAdams, Dan P. *The Stories We Live By: Personal Myths and the Making of the Self*. William Morrow, 1993. Intext

McEwan, Ian. *Atonement*. Doubleday, 2001.

Miller, J. Hillis. "Narrative and its Nonevents: Trauma and its Limits of Storytelling." *Reading Narrative.* U of Oklahoma P, 1998.

Monsutti, Alessandro. *War and Migration: Social Networks and Economic Strategies of the Hazaras of Afghanistan*. Routledge, 2005.

Morrison, Toni. *God Help the Child*. Knopf, 2015.

Munro, Brenna. "Locating 'Queer' in Contemporary Writing of Love and War in Nigeria." *Research in African Literatures*, vol. 47, no. 2, 2016, pp. 121-138.

Nabergoj, Ina Ana. "Children Without Childhood: The Emotionality of Orphaned Children and Images of Their Rescuers in Selected Works of English and Canadian Literature." *Acta Neophilologica*, vol. 50, no. 1-2, 2017, pp. 95-135.

Nabutanyi, Edgar Fred. *Representations of Troubled Childhoods in Selected Post-1990 African Fiction in English*. Diss. Stellenbosch U, 2013.

Nietzche, Friedrich. *On the Genealogy of Morality.* Translated by Carol Diethe. CambridgeUP, 2006.

Nwahunanya, Chinyere. *A Harvest from Tragedy: Critical Perspectives on Nigerian Civil War Literature*. Springfield Publishers, 1997.

Olson, Greta. "Reconsidering Unreliability: Fallible and Untrustworthy Narrators." *Narrative*, vol. 11, no. 1, Jan. 2003, pp. 93–109.

Osiki, Omon, et al. "Wars as Postcolonial African Illness in Uzodinma Iweala's Beasts of No Nation." *Africa Development/Afrique et Développement*, vol. 46, no. 1, 2021, pp. 141-162.

Pederson, Joshua. "Trauma and Narrative." *Trauma and Literature*, edited by J. Roger Kurtz, Cambridge UP, 2018, pp. 97-109.

Pennebaker, James W. *Writing to Heal: A Guided Journal for Recovering from Trauma and Emotional Upheaval*. New Harbinger Publications, 2004.

Phelan, James. “Estranging Unreliability, Bonding Unreliability,and the Ethics of Lolita.” *De Gruyter eBooks*, 2008, pp. 7–28. https://doi.org/10.1515/9783110209389.7.

Poster, Mark F. “Thoughts on War, Trauma, and the Need for Diplomacy.” *International Forum of Psychoanalysis*, vol. 23, no. 1, 2014, pp. 21-30.

Rais, Rasul Bakhsh. “Conflict in Afghanistan: Ethnicity, Religion and Neighbors.” *Ethnic Studies Report*, vol. 17, no. 1, 1999, pp. 1-22.

Ram, Samay. *The New Afghanistan: Pawn of America?*. Manas Publications, 2004.

Rippl, Gabriele, et al., eds. *Haunted Narratives: Life Writing in an Age of Trauma*. U of Toronto P, 2013.

Rothberg, Michael. *Traumatic Realism: The Demands of Holocaust Representation*. U of Minnesota P, 2000.

Scarry, Elaine. *The Body in Pain: The Making and Unmaking of the World*. Oxford UP, 1985.

Schönfelder, Christa. *Wounds and Words: Childhood and Family Trauma in Romantic and Postmodern Fiction*. Transcript Verlag, 2013.

Schönfelder, Christa, et al. “(Re-)Visions of the Buried Self: Childhood Trauma and Self-Narration in Margaret Atwood’s ‘Cat’s Eye’.” *Haunted Narratives: Life Writing in an Age of Trauma*, edited by Gabriele Rippl et al., U of Toronto P, 2013, pp. 83-104.

Scott, James C. “Patron-Client Politics and Political Change in Southeast Asia.” *The American Political Science Review*, vol. 66, no. 1, 1972, pp. 91-113.

Sherman, John. *War Stories: A Memoir of Nigeria and Biafra*. Mesa Verde Press, 2002.

Sherman, Nancy 2013. “Guilt in War.” *On Emotions*, edited by John Deigh: Oxford UP, 2013, pp.179-97.

Shklovsky, Viktor. “Art as Device.” Translated by Benjamin Sher, *Poetics Today*, vol. 36, no. 3, 2015, pp. 151-174.

Sidhwa, Bapsi. *Cracking India*. Milkweed Editions, 1991.

Sinervo, Aviva, and Kristen Cheney. “NGO Economies of Affect: Humanitarianism and Childhood in Contemporary and Historical Perspective.” *Disadvantaged Childhoods and Humanitarian Intervention*, edited by Alayna Mangat and Sarah Marie Wiebe, Routledge, 2019, pp. 1-35.

Stremlau, John J. *The International Politics of the Nigerian Civil War, 1967-1970*. Princeton UP, 2015.

Strueber, Daniel, et al. “*The Violent Brain.” Scientific American Mind*, vol. 17, no. 6, Dec. 2006, pp. 20–27. https://doi.org/10.1038/scientificamericanmind1206-20.

Sütterlin, Nicole A. “History of Trauma Theory.” *The Routledge Companion to Literature and Trauma*, edited by Colin Davis and Hanna Meretoja, Routledge, 2020, pp. 11-22.

Tal, Kalí. *Worlds of Hurt: Reading the Literatures of Trauma*. Cambridge UP, 1996.

Tan, Junqiang. “On The Reliability and Unreliability of Narrators in Narrative Works.” *Thinking*, no. 6, 2005, pp. 104-108.

Terr, Lenore. *Too Scared to Cry: Psychic Trauma in Childhood*. Harper & Row, 1990.

van der Kolk, Bessel A. *The Body Keeps the Score :Mind, Brain and Body in the Transformation of Trauma*. Penguin Books, 2014.

Van Dijkhuizen, Jan Frans. *A Literary History of Reconciliation: Power, Remorse and the Limits of Forgiveness*. Bloomsbury Academic, 2018.

Wald, Gayle. *Crossing the Line: Racial Passing in Twentieth-Century U.S Literature and Culture*. Duke UP, 2000.

Watkiss, Jessica A. “‘The Trials of Briony’: Gothic Desire in Ian McEwan’s Atonement.” *Aeternum: The Journal of Contemporary Gothic Studies*, vol. 3, no. 2, 2016, pp. 47-57.

Wessells, Michael. *Child Soldiers: From Violence to Protection*. Harvard UP, 2006.

Wood, Molara. “Uzodinma Iweala’s Beasts of No Nation.” *African Literature Today*, vol. 26, edited by Eckhard Breitinger, Boydell & Brewer, 2008, pp. 145-148.

Worthington, Kim L. “Creative Confession: Self-Writing, Forgiveness and Ethics in Ian McEwan’s Atonement.” *Rethinking Narrative Identity: Persona and Perspective*, edited by Claudia Holler and Martin Klepper, John Benjamins, 2013, pp. 147-169.

Yang, Yali. “The Trauma and Fragmentation Narrative in Amy Tan’s The Kitchen God’s Wife and Toni Morrison’s Beloved.” *Humanities and Social Sciences Communications*, vol. 10, no. 1, 2023, pp. 1-7.

Zack-Williams, Tunde. “When Children Become Killers: Child Soldiers in the Civil War in Sierra Leone.” *Handbook of Resilience in Children of War*, edited by Chandi Fernando and Michael Ferrari, Springer, 2013, pp. 83-94.